



**DELHI UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY**

DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Cl. No. V2:252 M69.s
Ac. No. 27827

G9

Date of release for loan

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of one anna will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime.

MAHATMA GANDHI

ESSAYS AND REFLECTIONS
ON HIS LIFE AND WORK

*Presented to him on his Seventieth Birthday
October 2nd, 1939*

edited by
S. RADHAKRISHNAN

LONDON
GEORGE ALLEN & UNW.
MUSEUM STREET

FIRST PUBLISHED IN 1939

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN
In 13-Point Perpetua Type
BY UNWIN BROTHERS LIMITED
WOKING

P R E F A C E

Owing to the distracted condition of the world—a war in the East and a near-war in Europe—and my absence from India since the end of last year, it has not been possible to get together all the persons who would have been glad to join in this world tribute to Mahatma Gandhi on his seventieth birthday.

The different essays and reflections, each with its individual character, might be expected to make the book uneven and disconnected, but I hope that it has not done so. Almost every page is knit together by a central and never-forgotten theme, the challenge and message of Gandhi to the contemporary world. By general admission something is wrong with it. We are living in a singular moment of history, a moment of crisis, in the literal sense of the word. In every branch of our activity, material and spiritual, we seem to have arrived at a critical turning-point. Those who have surveyed the scene have given us different answers about the cause and cure of our ailing civilization. Gandhi tells us that we, who constitute the social order, are the disease and we must change, if civilization is to improve.

Those who read these pages will be impressed by the fundamental unity between Gandhi's theory and practice, the exquisite harmony of his life and work, which is the very essence of sincerity. It marks him out as one of the outstanding personalities, not only of our time but of all time.

The contributions are arranged in alphabetical order. A few of Gandhi's most distinctive utterances which are of more than local and temporary importance are brought together in an Appendix.

The Editor thanks Mr. Stephen Hobhouse for his kindness in reading the proofs.

S. R.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION <i>by Sir S. Radhakrishnan</i>	13
MAHATMA GANDHI: AN ESTIMATE <i>by Horace G. Alexander</i>	40
THE TRIBUTE OF A FRIEND <i>by C. F. Andrews</i>	46
THE ESSENCE OF GANDHIJI <i>by George S. Arundale</i>	53
THE SERVANT OF INDIA <i>by Bishop V. S. Azariah</i>	56
GANDHI, AS BRIDGE AND RECONCILER <i>by Ernest Barker</i>	58
"A LIGHT UPON HIS NAME" <i>by Laurence Binyon</i>	62
"A WAY OF LIVING" <i>by Mrs. Pearl S. Buck</i>	63
MAHĀTMĀ <i>by Ananda K. Coomaraswamy</i>	63
TWO MEETINGS WITH GANDHI <i>by Lionel Curtis</i>	67
GANDHI AND THE CONGRESS <i>by Bhagavan Das</i>	68
GANDHI'S STATESMANSHIP <i>by Albert Einstein</i>	79
GANDHIJI AS A SOCIAL SCIENTIST AND SOCIAL INVENTOR <i>by Richard B. Gregg</i>	80
THE HOUR AND THE MAN <i>by Gerald Heard</i>	87
M. K. GANDHI: APOSTLE OF LIGHT AND TRUTH-FORCE <i>by Carl Heath</i>	91

CONTENTS

	PAGE
THE SIGNIFICANCE OF GANDHI FOR THE OUTLOOK OF A CHRISTIAN PACIFIST	94
<i>by Stephen Hobhouse</i>	
ON FREEDOM AND BELONGING	111
<i>by W. E. Hocking</i>	
THE NATURE OF GANDHI'S GREATNESS	112
<i>by John Haynes Holmes</i>	
A SOUTH AFRICAN TRIBUTE	114
<i>by R. F. Alfred Hoernlé</i>	
GANDHI IN SOUTH AFRICA	120
<i>by Ian H. Hofmeyer</i>	
GANDHI AND THE FUTURE OF PACIFISM	123
<i>by Laurence Housman</i>	
GANDHI'S SATYAGRAHA AND THE WAY OF THE CROSS	124
<i>by John S. Hoyland</i>	
AN INDIAN STATESMAN'S TRIBUTE	149
<i>by Sir Mirza M. Ismail</i>	
'THE AUTHORITY OF DETACHMENT AND MORAL FORCE	155
<i>by C. E. M. Joad</i>	
MAHATMA GANDHI AND SOUL FORCE	161
<i>by Rufus M. Jones</i>	
GANDHI'S ACHIEVEMENTS FOR THE BRITISH COMMONWEALTH	166
<i>by A. Berriedale Keith</i>	
GANDHI'S PLACE IN WORLD HISTORY	169
<i>by Count Hermann Keyserling</i>	
A BIRTHDAY GREETING	173
<i>by George Lansbury</i>	
GANDHI'S FAITH AND INFLUENCE	174
<i>by John Macmurray</i>	
THE NEED OF A LIFE INSTILLED WITH UNITY	177
<i>by Don Salvador de Madariaga</i>	

CONTENTS

	<small>PAGE</small>
THE POWER OF NON-VIOLENCE <i>by Miss Ethel Mannin</i>	182
GANDHI AND THE CHILD <i>by Dr. Maria Montessori</i>	186
THE EVOLUTION OF MR. GANDHI <i>by Arthur Moore</i>	188
GANDHI'S SPIRITUAL AUTHORITY <i>by Gilbert Murray</i>	197
A VISIT FROM THE FAR FAST <i>by Yone Noguchi</i>	199
GANDHI IN HIS MANY ASPECTS <i>by B. Pattabhisitaramayya</i>	202
GANDHI'S MESSAGE TO THE WHOLE WORLD <i>by Miss Maude D. Petre</i>	222
THE WISDOM OF GANDHIJI <i>by Hy. S. L. Polak</i>	227
THE TRIUMPH OF THE SPIRIT <i>by Llewelyn Powys</i>	232
HOMAGE FROM CHINA <i>by M. Quo Tai-Chi</i>	237
A STATESMAN IN BEGGAR'S GARB <i>by Sir Abdul Qadir</i>	238
INDIA'S DEBT TO GANDHI <i>by Rajendraprasad</i>	243
THE FOOL OF GOD <i>by Reginald Reynolds</i>	246
HOMAGE FROM A MAN OF THE WEST TO GANDHI <i>by Romain Rolland</i>	251
AN ENGLISHWOMAN'S FAITH <i>by Miss Maude Royden</i>	254

CONTENTS

	<small>PAGE</small>
THE FRUITS OF TRUE LEADERSHIP <i>by Lord Samuel</i>	258
IMPRESSIONS FROM THE ROUND TABLE CONFERENCE <i>by Lord Sankey</i>	262
A GREAT PROPHET OF HINDUISM <i>by D. S. Sarma</i>	265
THE GREAT LITTLE MAHATMA <i>by Mrs. Clare Sheridan</i>	268
GANDHI'S POLITICAL METHOD <i>by J. C. Smuts</i>	276
THE POET'S VERDICT <i>'by Rabindranath Tagore</i>	282
GANDHI: A CHARACTER STUDY <i>by Edward Thompson</i>	283
THE PATH OF SATYĀGRAHA <i>by Srimati Sophia Wadia</i>	295
GANDHI'S FAST FOR HINDU-MUSLIM UNITY <i>by Bishop Foss Westcott</i>	306
MAHATMA GANDHI AND AGGRESSIVE PACIFISM <i>by Jack C. Winslow</i>	310
REFLECTIONS ON MR. GANDHI'S LEADERSHIP <i>by H. G. Wood</i>	314
GANDHI—AFTER FORTY-SEVEN YEARS <i>by Sir Francis Younghusband</i>	319
PATRIOTISM AND PUBLIC SPIRIT <i>by Sir Alfred Zimmern</i>	322
THANKS TO GANDHI <i>by Arnold Zweig</i>	327
LETTERS <i>from Lord Halifax, Upton Sinclair, A. H. Compton</i>	330

CONTENTS

	PAGE
APPENDIX: EXTRACTS FROM MAHATMA GANDHI'S WRITINGS AND SPEECHES	
I. Hinduism	332
II. The Place of Jesus	338
III. Among Evangelical Christians	342
IV. Christianity and Hinduism	345
V. Ideals for the Ashram of Soul-Force	350
VI. "To Every Englishman" (1920)	359
VII. The Trial Speech (1922)	361
VIII. Speech at the London Round Table Conference (1931)	368
•	
THE HINDU IDEA OF TRUTH <i>by J. H. Muirhead</i>	379

INTRODUCTION

GANDHI'S RELIGION AND POLITICS

by SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN
(University of Oxford)

The greatest fact in the story of man on earth is not his material achievements, the empires he has built and broken, but the growth of his soul from age to age in its search for truth and goodness. Those who take part in this adventure of the soul secure an enduring place in the history of human culture. Time has discredited heroes as easily as it has forgotten everyone else; but the saints remain. The greatness of Gandhi is more in his holy living than in his heroic struggles, in his insistence on the creative power of the soul and its life-giving quality at a time when the destructive forces seem to be in the ascendant.

I. Religious Basis of Politics

Gandhi is known to the world as the one man more than any other who is mainly responsible for the mighty upheaval of the Indian nation which has shaken and loosened its chains. Politicians are not generally reputed to take religion seriously, for the values to which they are committed, such as the political control of one people by another, the economic exploitation of the poorer and weaker human beings, are so clearly inconsistent with the values of religion that the latter could not be taken too seriously or interpreted too accurately. But for Gandhi, all life is of one piece. "To see the universal and all pervading Spirit of Truth face to face one must be able to

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

love the meanest of creation as oneself. And a man who aspires after that cannot afford to keep out of any field of life. That is why my devotion to Truth has drawn me into the field of politics; and I can say without the slightest hesitation and yet in all humility, that those who say that religion has nothing to do with politics do not know what religion means!" Again, "I have no desire for the perishable kingdom of earth, I am striving for the kingdom of heaven, which is spiritual deliverance. For me the road to salvation lies through incessant toil in the service of my country and of humanity. I want to identify myself with everything that lives. In the language of the *Gītā*, I want to live at peace with both friend and foe. So my patriotism is for me a stage on my journey to the land of eternal freedom and peace. Thus it will be seen that for me there are no politics devoid of religion. They subserve religion. Politics bereft of religion are a death-trap because they kill the soul."¹ If man as a political being has not been much of a success, it is because he has kept religion and politics apart, thus misunderstanding both. For Gandhi there is no religion apart from human activity. Though in the present circumstances of India Gandhi happens to be a political revolutionary who refuses to accept tyranny or acquiesce in slavery, he is far from the uncompromising type of revolutionary whose abstractions force men into unnatural and inhuman shapes. In the acid test of experience he remains, not a politician or a reformer, not a philosopher or a moralist, but someone composed of them all, an essentially religious person endowed with the highest and most human qualities and made more lovable by the consciousness of his own limitations and by an unfailing sense of humour.

¹ C. F. Andrews, *Mahatma Gandhi—His Own Story*, pp. 353-4, 357 (George Allen & Unwin).

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

II. Religion as Life in God

Whatever opinion we may hold of God, it is impossible to deny that He means something of supreme importance and absolute reality to Gandhi. It is his faith in God that has created in him a new man whose power and passion and love we feel. He has the feeling of something close to him, a spiritual presence which disturbs, embarrasses and overwhelms, an assurance of reality. Times without number, when doubts disturb his mind, he leaves it to God. Was there a response from God? No and Yes. No, for Gandhi does not hear anything said even by the most secret or the most distant of voices; yes, because he has a sense of reply, the appeased, satisfied feeling of one who has received an answer. It is indeed from the nature of the reply which is so eminently rational that he recognizes that he is not the victim of his own dreams or hallucinations. "There is an indefinable, mysterious power that pervades everything. I feel it though I do not see it. It is this unseen power which makes itself felt and yet defies all proof because it is so unlike all that I perceive through my senses. It is proved not by extraneous evidence but in the transformed conduct and character of those who have felt the real presence of God within. Such testimony is to be found in the experiences of an unbroken line of prophets and sages in all countries and climes. To reject this evidence is to deny oneself."¹ "It can never be a matter for argument. If you would have me convince others by argument, I am floored. But I can tell you this—that I am surer of His existence than of the fact that you and I are sitting in this room. I can also testify that I may live without air and water but not without Him. You may pluck out my eyes, but that will not kill me. You may chop off my nose, but that will not kill me. But blast my beliefs in God and I am dead."²

¹ *Young India*, October 11, 1928.

² *Harijan*, May 16, 1938.

In consistency with the great spiritual tradition of Hinduism, Gandhi affirms that when once we rise from the grossness to which the flesh is prone into the liberty of spirit, the view from the summit is identical for all. We have to climb the mountain by different paths, from the points where we happen to be, but that which we seek is the same. "The Allah of Islam is the same as the God of the Christians and the Isvara of the Hindus. Even as there are numerous names of God in Hinduism, there are many names of God in Islam. The names do not indicate individuality but attributes, and little man has tried in his humble way to describe mighty God by giving Him attributes, though He is above all attributes, Indescribable, Immeasurable. Living faith in this God means equal respect for all religions. It would be the height of intolerance—and intolerance is a species of violence—to believe that your religion is superior to other religions and that you would be justified in wanting others to change over to your faith."¹ His attitude to other religions is not one of negative toleration but of positive appreciation. He accepts Jesus' life and work as a supreme illustration of the principle of non-violence. "Jesus occupies in my heart the place of one of the great teachers who have made a considerable influence on my life." He appreciates the character of the prophet Mohammad, his fervent faith and practical efficiency, the tender compassion and suffering of Ali. The great truths emphasized by Islam, intense belief in God's overruling majesty, puritanic simplicity of life, ardent sense of brotherhood and chivalrous devotion to the poor are accepted by him as fundamental to all religions. But the dominating force in his life has been Hinduism with its conception of truth, its vision of the soul and its charity.

All religions, however, are means to religion. "Let me explain what I mean by religion. It is not the Hindu religion

¹ *Harjan*, May 14, 1938.

which I certainly prize above all other religions, but the religion which transcends Hinduism, which changes one's very nature, which binds one indissolubly to the truth within, and which ever purifies. It is the permanent element in human nature which counts no cost too great in order to find full expression and which leaves the soul utterly restless until it has found itself, known its Maker, and appreciated the true correspondence between the Maker and itself."

There is no other God than Truth, and the only means for the realization of truth is love or ahimsā. Knowledge of truth and the practice of love are impossible without self-purification. Only the pure in heart can see God. To attain to purity of heart, to rise above attachment and repulsion, to be free from passion in thought, word and deed, to be redeemed from fear and vanity, the inconsistencies of our flesh and the discursiveness of our minds must be overcome. Disciplined effort, austere living, tapas is the way to it. Suffering rinses our spirit clean. According to Hindu mythology, the God Śiva undertakes Himself to swallow the poison which comes up when the ocean is churned. The God of the Christians gave His Son in order to save mankind. Even if they are myths, why should they have arisen if they did not express some deep-seated intuitions in men? The more you love, the more you suffer. Infinite love is infinite suffering. "Whosoever would save his life shall lose it." We are here working for God, called upon to use our life for carrying out His intentions. If we refuse to do so and insist on saving our lives instead of spending them, we negate our true nature and so lose our lives. If we are to be able to follow to the farthest limit we can see, if we are to respond to the most distant call, earthly values, fame, possessions and pleasures of the senses have to be abandoned. To be one with the poor and the outcast is to be his equal in poverty and to cast oneself out.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

To be free to say or do the right, regardless of praise or blame, to be free to love all and forgive all, non-attachment is essential. Freedom is only for the unconfined who enjoy the whole world without owning a blade of grass in it. In this matter, Gandhi is adhering to the great ideal of the saññāśins who has no fixed abode and is bound to no stable form of living.

There is, however, some exaggeration when the ascetic code in all its fullness is prescribed, not merely for the saññāśins but for the whole of humanity. Sexual restraint, for example, is essential for all, but celibacy is only for the few. The sexual act is not a mere pleasure of the body, a purely carnal act, but is a means by which love is expressed and life perpetuated. It becomes evil, if it harms others or if it interferes with a person's spiritual development, but neither of these conditions is inherent in the act itself. The act by which we live, by which love is expressed and the race continued is not an act of shame or sin. But when the masters of spiritual life insist on celibacy, they demand that we should preserve singleness of mind from destruction by bodily desire.

Gandhi has spared no pains in disciplining himself to the utmost possible extent, and those who know him will admit his claim that he has "known no distinction between relatives and strangers, countrymen and foreigners, white and coloured, Hindus and Indians of other faiths, whether Muslims, Parsees, Christians or Jews." He adds: "I cannot claim this as a special virtue, as it has been in my very nature rather than a result of any effort on my part, whereas in the case of non-violence, celibacy and other cardinal virtues, I am fully conscious of a continuous striving for the cultivation of them."¹

Only the pure in heart can love God and love man. Suffering love is the miracle of the spirit by which, though

¹ *Mahatma Gandhi—His Own Story*, p. 209.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

the wrongs of others are borne on our shoulders, we feel a sense of comfort deeper and more real than any given by purely selfish pleasures. At such moments we understand that nothing in the world is sweeter than the knowledge that we have been able to give a moment's happiness to another, nothing more precious than the sense that we have shared another's sorrow. Perfect compassion untouched by condescension, washed clean of pride, even of the pride of doing good, is the highest religious quality.

III. The Spirit of Humanity

It follows that the mark of spirituality is not exile from the natural world but work in it with love for all. *Yasmin sarvāṇi bhūtāṇi ātmāivābhūt vijānatah.* Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ātmajava. The condition is absolute. There must be freedom and equality of status. Such a demand makes for the establishment of a universal community of free persons and requires those who accept it to overcome the artificial barriers of race and creed, wealth and power, class and nation. If one group or nation attempts to make itself secure at the expense of another, Germans at the expense of the Czechs, landlords at the expense of tenants, capitalists at the expense of workers, it is adopting an undemocratic method and can defend its injustice only by the force of arms. The dominant group has the fear of dispossession and the oppressed stores up just resentment. Only justice can terminate this unnatural condition, the justice which means the recognition of the equal claims of all human beings. The movement of humanity all these centuries has been towards human brotherhood. The various forward thrusts that have become manifest in different parts of the world, the ideals of justice, equality and freedom from exploitation of which men have become

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

increasingly conscious, the demands they have come to feel are all risings of the common man against the perversions and compulsions that were perpetually developing to restrain him and hold him back. The progress of the consciousness of freedom is the essence of human history.

We are inclined to give too much importance to exceptional incidents by seeing them in distorted perspective. What we do not sufficiently realize is that these setbacks, blind alleys and disasters are only a part to be viewed in relation to the background of the general tendency at work over the centuries. If we could only get a detached view of the continued effort of mankind, we would be amazed and profoundly moved. Serfs are becoming free men, heretics are no longer burned, nobles are surrendering their privileges, slaves are being freed from a life of shame, rich men are apologizing for their wealth, militant empires are proclaiming the necessity of peace, and even dreams of the union of mankind are cherished. Yes, we have even to-day the lust of the powerful, the malice of knaves, the lies of the hypocrites and the rise of arrogant racialism and nationalism; yet one would be blind if one did not see the great tradition of democracy which is universal in its sweep. Unceasing is the toil of those who are labouring to build a world where the poorest have a right to sufficient food, to light, air and sunshine in their homes, to hope, dignity and beauty in their lives. Gandhi is among the foremost of the servants of humanity. He is not comforted by the prospect of the distant future when faced by the threat of immediate disasters. He joins forces with men of fixed convictions to work by the most direct means possible for the cure of evils and the prevention of dangers. Democracy for him is not a matter of phrases but of social realities. All his public activities in South Africa and India can be understood only if we know his love of the common man.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

The civilized world has been stirred deeply by the Nazi treatment of the Jews, and liberal statesmen have solemnly expressed their disapproval and sorrow at the recrudescence of racial prejudice. But the strange though startling fact is that in democratically governed countries of the British Empire and the United States of America many communities suffer political and social disabilities on racial grounds. When Gandhi was in South Africa he saw that Indians, though nominally free citizens of the British Empire, were subjected to grave disabilities. Both Church and State denied equality of rights to non-European races, and Gandhi started his passive resistance movement on a mass scale to protest against the oppressive restrictions. He stood out for the essential principle that men *qua* men are equal and artificial distinctions based on race and colour were both unreasonable and immoral. He revealed to the Indian community its actual degradation and inspired it with a sense of its own dignity and honour. His effort was not confined to the welfare of Indians. He would not justify the exploitation of the African natives or the better treatment of Indians on account of their historic culture. While the more obnoxious of the discriminatory legislation against the Indians was abolished, even to-day Indians are subjected to humiliating restrictions which do not reflect credit on those who submit to them or add to the prestige of the Government which imposes them.

In India it was his ambition to rid the country of its divisions and discords, to discipline the masses to self-dependence, raise women to a plane of political, economic and social equality with men, end the religious hatreds which divide the nation, and cleanse Hinduism of its social abomination of untouchability. The success he has achieved in removing this blot on Hinduism will stand out as one of his greatest contributions to the progress of humanity. So long as there is a class of untouchables he belongs to it.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

"If I have to be re-born, I should wish to be born an untouchable so that I may share their sorrows, sufferings and the affronts levelled at them, in order that I may endeavour to free myself and them from that miserable condition." To say that we love God as unseen and at the same time deal cruelly with people who move by His life or life derived from Him is a contradiction in terms. Though Gandhi prides himself on being a conservative Hindu, there has been no more vigorous critic of the rigours and disabilities of caste, of the curse of untouchability, of the vice in temples, of cruelty to cattle and the animal world. "I am a reformer through and through. But my zeal never leads me to the rejection of any of the essential things of Hinduism."

To-day his opposition to the autocracy of the Indian princes is based on his love for the millions of their subjects. Not even the most generous observer can say that all is well with the States. I may perhaps quote a few sentences from the *Statesman* of Calcutta, a paper which represents British interests. "It is no reflection upon individuals but only upon human nature to say that in many of the States appalling conditions prevail. The bad landlords as well as the good ones are subject to no laws, they have the power of life and death, there are no obstacles to their greed or lust or cruelty, if they are greedy, vicious or cruel. If the treaties which protect petty tyrants are never to be revised, if the Paramount Power is for ever to have an obligation of honour to defend the indefensible, then some day an irresistible force will encounter an immovable object, and according to the classic answer to this problem something will go to smithereens." The slowness of evolution is the cause of all revolutions. Gandhi, with the utmost friendship for the princes, is asking them to wake up and set their houses in order. I hope that they will realize, before it is too late, that

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

their safety and survival are bound up with the rapid introduction of responsible government, which even the Paramount Power with all its strength was obliged to concede in the provinces.

Gandhi's main charge against the British Government in India is that it has led to the oppression of the poor. From the beginning of her history India has been known for her wealth and possessions. We have vast areas of the most fertile soil, material resources in inexhaustible abundance, and with proper care and attention we have enough to go round and feed every man, woman and child. And yet we have millions of people who are the victims of poverty, who are under-nourished and under-housed, whose lives are an unceasing struggle from youth to old age, until at last death comes to their rescue and stills their aching hearts. These conditions are not due to pitiless nature, but to the inhuman system which cries out to be abolished, not only in the interests of India but of the whole of humanity.

In the broadcast address which he gave from London to America in 1931, Gandhi referred to the "semi-starved millions scattered throughout the seven hundred thousand villages dotted over a surface nineteen hundred miles long and fifteen hundred miles broad." He said: "It is a painful phenomenon that those simple villagers, through no fault of their own, have nearly six months in the year idle upon their hands. Time was, not long ago, when every village was self-sufficient in regard to the two primary human wants—food and clothing. Unfortunately for us, when the East India Company, by means which I would prefer not to describe, destroyed that supplementary village industry, then the millions of spinners—who had become famed through the cunning of their deft fingers for drawing the finest thread, such as has never been yet drawn by any modern machinery—these village spinners found them-

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

selves one fine morning with their noble occupation gone, and from that day forward India has become progressively poor, no matter what may be said to the contrary."

India lives in the villages, and her civilization has been an agricultural one which is becoming increasingly mechanical. Gandhi is the representative of the peasant, the producer of the world's food who is fundamental in society, and is anxious to maintain and fortify this basic bias of Indian civilization. He finds that under British rule the people are giving up their old standards and in spite of many admirable qualities they have acquired, such as mechanical intelligence, inventive skill, courage and adventure, they are worshipping material success, are greedy for tangible gains and are governed by worldly standards. Our industrial cities have lost all proportion to the landscape out of which they have grown, have swollen to meaningless dimensions, and their people caught in the entangling apparatus of money and machinery have become violent, restless, thoughtless, undisciplined and unscrupulous. For Gandhi, industrialized humanity has come to mean women who for a paltry wage are compelled to work out their barren lives, babies who are doped with opium so that they shall not cry and disturb their working mothers, little children who are robbed of their childhood and in their tender years are forced into industrial works, and millions of unemployed who are dwarfed and diseased. We are being snared and enslaved, he thinks, and our souls are conquered for a mess of pottage. A spirit and a culture which had soared up in the rishis of the Upaniṣads, the Buddhist monks, Hindu saññiyāsins and Muslim fakirs, cannot be content with cars and radios and plutocracy. Our vision is dimmed and our way lost. We have taken a wrong twist which has dispossessed, impoverished and embittered our agricultural population, corrupted, coarsened and blinded our workers, and given us millions of children

with blank faces, dead eyes and drooping mouths. Beneath our present bafflement and bewilderment the bulk of the people retain a hunger for the realization of the old dream of genuine liberty, real self-respect; of a life where none is rich and none is poor, where the extremes of luxury and leisure are abolished and where industry and commerce exist in a simple form.

Gandhi does not aim at a peasant society which will forgo altogether the benefits of the machine. He is not against large-scale production. When he was asked whether cottage industries and large-scale production can be harmonized, he said, "Yes, if they are planned so as to help the villages. Key-industries, industries which the nation needs, may be centralized. Under my scheme nothing will be allowed to be produced by cities which can be equally well produced by the villages. The proper function of cities is to serve as clearing-houses for village products."¹ His insistence on khadi (or homespun) and his scheme of popular education centring round the handicrafts are devised to resuscitate the villages. He repeatedly warns that India is to be found not in its few cities but in its innumerable villages. The bulk of India's population must get back to the land, stay in the land, and live primarily off the produce of the land so that their families may be self-supporting, owning the implements they use, the soil they cultivate and the roof that shelters them. Not an uprooted, shiftless class of factory workers, not an unsound, rapacious, moneylending business community, but a responsible agrarian population and the stable, level-headed people of small agricultural market-towns must dominate the cultural, social, economic and political life of the country, give it morality, tone and noble objectives. This is not to become primitive. It is only to take up a mode of existence that is instinctive to India, that supplied her

¹ *Harijan*, January 28, 1939.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

once with a purpose, a faith and a meaning. It is the only way to keep our species civilized. India of the peasant and rustic life, of village communities, of forest hermitages and spiritual retreats has taught the world many great lessons but has wronged no man, has injured no land and sought no dominion over others. To-day the true purpose of life has been perverted. How is India to get out of this slough of despond? After centuries of subjection, the people seem to have lost the will or the wish to lift themselves out of it. The forces against them seem to be too strong. To give them confidence, a prouder self-respect, a more erect carriage, is no easy task. Yet Gandhi has tried to re-kindle a torpid generation with the fire that burns in his soul, with his passion for freedom. In freedom men and women reveal their best; in slavery they are debased. To liberate the ordinary human being from the restrictions, internal and external, which warp his nature has been the aim of freedom. As a great defender of human liberty, he is struggling to release the country from foreign control. Patriotism, when it is so pure, is neither a crime nor bad manners. To fight against the present unnatural conditions is one's sacred duty. He employs spiritual weapons and refuses to draw the sword, and in the process is training the people for independence, making them capable of winning and holding it. Sir George Lloyd (now Lord Lloyd), the then Governor of Bombay, said of Gandhi's campaign: "Gandhi's was the most colossal experiment in world history and it came within an inch of succeeding."

Though he has failed in his attempt to move the British Government, he has liberated forces in the country which will not cease to act. He has stirred the people from their lethargy, given them a new self-confidence and responsibility and united them in their resolve to win freedom. To the extent to which there is to-day an awakening of a

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

new spirit, a preparedness for a new kind of national corporate life, a new social attitude in dealing with the depressed classes, it is largely due to the spiritual energy and dynamic of Gandhi's movement.

Gandhi's outlook has nothing sectional or provincial about it. He believes that the heritage of India can help the culture of the world. A prostrated India can give no hope to humanity; only an awakened, free India can give help to a groaning world. Gandhi affirms that if the British are earnest about their vision of justice, peace and order, it is not enough to put down the aggressive powers and preserve the *status quo*. Our love of liberty and justice must exclude the passive violence of refusing to reform a situation which is contrary to the professed ideals. If greed, cruelty and contempt of man have gone to the making of empires, we must change them before we call upon the world to rally to the forces of freedom and justice. Violence is either active or passive. The aggressive powers are now actively violent; the imperial powers who persist in the enjoyment of unjust advantages acquired from past violence are as much guilty of violence and are inimical to freedom and democracy. Until we act honestly in this matter, we cannot secure a better world-order and the world will be in a chronic state of uncertainty, full of wars and threats of wars. Self-government for India is the acid test of British honesty. Gandhi is still observing his twenty-four hours' fast every Monday to indicate to all concerned that self-rule is unattained. And yet his is the restraining influence on an impatient India, torn between the legitimate aspirations of the people and the obstinacy of the British ruling classes. He has been the greatest force for peace in India.

When he landed in England after the South African struggle was over, he found that war against Germany had been declared. He offered to enlist unconditionally for the

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

whole duration of the war in order to undertake ambulance work at the Front. His offer was accepted and he was placed in a responsible post with an Indian unit. But owing to over-exposure while on duty, he was taken ill with pleurisy and his life was suspected to be in danger. On recovery he was ordered by the doctors to leave for the warm climate of India. He actively encouraged recruiting in the war—a thing which has puzzled even many of his friends. At the end of the war the Rowlatt Act was passed against the unanimous opposition of Indians. Things were done in the Punjab under martial law which shocked the country. Gandhi was one of the authors of the Congress Inquiry Report on the Punjab disturbances. In spite of it all, he recommended to the Congress at Amritsar in December 1919 that the Rowlatt Act should be accepted and worked in a constitution. When in 1920 the Hunter Commission reported and exonerated in its criticism of official action, when the House of Lords declined to condemn General Dyer, struggling the great decision of his life to refuse to co-operate with the British Government, and in September 1920 the Congress adopted the resolution of non-violent non-co-operation.

It will be well to quote his own words in a letter to the Viceroy, written on August 1, 1920: "Your Excellency's light-hearted treatment of official crime, your exoneration of Sir Michael O'Dwyer, Mr. Montagu's despatch and, above all, the shameful ignorance of the Punjab events and the callous disregard of the feelings of Indians betrayed by the House of Lords, have filled me with the gravest misgivings regarding the future of the Empire, have estranged me completely from the present Government, and have disabled me from rendering, as I have hitherto whole-heartedly rendered, my loyal co-operation.

"In my humble opinion the ordinary method of agitating by way of petitions, deputations, and the like is no remedy

for moving to repentance a Government so hopelessly indifferent to the welfare of its charge as the Government of India has proved to be. In European countries condemnation of such grievous wrongs as the Khilafat and the Punjab would have resulted in a bloody revolution by the people. They would have resisted, at all costs, national emasculation. Half of India is too weak to offer violent resistance, and the other half is unwilling to do so. I have therefore ventured to suggest the remedy of non-co-operation, which enables those who wish to dissociate themselves from Government, and which, if unattended by violence and undertaken in an ordered manner, must compel it to retrace its steps and undo the wrongs committed; but, whilst I pursue the policy of non-co-operation, in so far as I can carry the people with me, I shall not lose hope that you will yet see your way to do justice."

While he maintains that British rule in its present form has made India "poorer in wealth, in manliness, in godliness and in her sons' power to defend themselves," he hopes that it can be altered. Even while he continues his campaign against British control, he is not opposed to the British connection. In the heyday of the non-co-operation movement he fought stoutly against the movement for complete severance from Britain.

While he was willing to work with the British as friends and equals, he was firm that no improvement in the Indian situation was possible so long as the British adopted an unnatural attitude of patronage and superiority. Let us remember that even in moments of the greatest excitement he did not harbour ill-will to the British. "I will not hurt England or Germany to serve India."

When by some stupid or ill-conceived measure, such as the Amritsar massacre or the appointment of the Simon Commission, India lost patience and self-control and

became aflame with wrath, Gandhi was there leading the discontent and indignation into safe channels of love and reconciliation. In the Round Table Conference he showed his indelible affection for the British and his faith in a commonwealth based not on force but on reason, and the will to promote the general good of mankind. A halting measure of self-government in the provinces was the result of the Round Table Conferences, and when the majority of the people were against the acceptance and working of the Constitution, it was Gandhi again, more than any other, who persuaded the Congress to work the reforms for what they were worth. His sole concern is peace with Britain, but peace rooted in freedom and friendship. India to-day is represented by a leader who has no trace of racial bitterness or personal rancour; he has no faith in the use of force and restrains his people from resorting to violence. He does not desire to separate India from the British Commonwealth if only it means a fellowship of free nations. His Majesty the King in his speech to the Canadian Parliament on the 19th of May said that the unity of the British Empire "finds expression to-day in the free association of nations enjoying common principles of government and a common attachment to the ideals of peace and freedom, bound together by a common allegiance to the Crown." Gandhi demands the application of these "common principles of government" to India. He claims that the Indians should be masters in their own house, and that is neither unreasonable nor immoral. He is keen on bringing about better relations between the two camps through the co-operation of men of good will.

It is tragic that his appeal avails no more than the whistling of the wind. After years of unwearied labour and heroic struggle his great mission remains unfulfilled, though his vision and faith are still alive. For myself I shall hope that British public opinion will assert itself and com-

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

pel its Government to set up a free, self-governing India, without bartering or niggling, without hesitation or delay, with a fine, open gesture of faith, though it may involve a little risk: for I am persuaded that, if it is not done in response to Gandhi's appeal for justice and fair play, the relations of our two countries will get worse, the breach will widen and bitterness grow to the detriment and danger of both.

Whether it is the South African Government or the British Government, whether it is the Indian mill-owners or the Hindu priests or the Indian princes who are the objects of Gandhi's criticism and attack, the underlying spirit is exactly the same in all these different activities. "I recognize no God except the God that is to be found in the hearts of the dumb millions. They do not recognize His presence; I do. And I worship the God that is Truth, or Truth which is God, through the service of these millions."¹

IV. Satyāgraha

"Ahimsā or non-violence is the highest duty" is a well-known saying of the *Mahābhārata*. Its practical application in life is satyāgraha or soul-force. It is based on the assumption that "the world rests on the bedrock of satya or truth. Asatya, meaning untruth, also means non-existent, and satya, or truth, means 'that which is.' If untruth does not so much as exist, its victory is out of the question. And truth being 'that which is' can never be destroyed."² God is the reality. The will to freedom and love is in accordance with reality. When man rejects this will for his own interests, he is rejecting himself. By this act of frustration he is setting himself in opposition to reality, is isolating

¹ *Harijan*, March 11, 1939.

² *Mahatma Gandhi—His Own Story*, p. 225.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

himself from it. This negation represents man's estrangement from himself, his denial of the truth about himself. It cannot be final or ultimate. It cannot destroy the real will. Reality cannot frustrate itself. "The gates of hell shall not prevail." God cannot be beaten. The meek shall inherit the earth and not the mighty who will lose themselves in the effort to save themselves, for they put their trust in unspiritual or unreal things like wealth and death-dealing weapons. Ultimately men are ruled not by those who believe in negation, hatred, violence, but by those who believe in wisdom and love, in inward and outward peace.

Satyāgraha is rooted in the power of reality, in the inward strength of the soul. It is not merely the negative virtue of abstaining from violence, but the positive one of doing good. "If I hit my adversary, that is of course violence; but to be truly non-violent, I must love him and pray for him even when he hits me." Love is unity and it comes into clash with evil which is separateness, getting, despising, hating, hurting and killing. Love does not acquiesce in evil, in wrongdoing, injustice or exploitation. It does not evade the issue but fearlessly faces the wrong-doer and resists his wrong with the overpowering force of love and suffering, for it is contrary to human nature to fight with force. Our conflicts are to be settled by the human means of intelligence and good will, of love and service. In this confused world the one saving feature is the great adventure of being human. Creative life asserts itself in the midst of death. In spite of all this fear and gloom, humanity is practised by all, by the farmer and the weaver, by the artist and the philosopher, by the monk in the cloister and the scientist in the laboratory, and by all, young and old, when they love and suffer. Life is immense. Prāno virāt.

The advocates of the use of force adopt a crude version

of the Darwinian struggle for existence. They overlook the fundamental distinction between the animal and the human worlds and exalt a biological generalization into a doctrine of human destiny. If violent resistance is adopted in a world where it does not belong, human life is in danger of being degraded to the level of animal existence. In the *Mahābhārata* the warring world of men is compared to a dog kennel. "First there comes the wagging of tails, then the bark, then the replying bark, then the turning of one round the other, then the show of teeth, then the roaring, and then comes the commencement of the fight. *Āśvāḥ*, the same with men; there is no difference whatever."¹ Gandhi asks us to leave fighting to apes and dogs and behave like men and serve the right by quiet suffering. Love or self-suffering can overcome the enemy, not by destroying him but by changing him, for he is, after all, a person of like passions with ourselves. Gandhi's acts of repentance and self-humiliation are full of moral courage and atoning sacrifice.

While a few individuals here and there tried to use the method of love in their personal lives, it is Gandhi's supreme achievement to have adopted it as a plan for social and political liberation. Under his leadership organized groups in South Africa and India have used it on a large scale for the redress of grievances. Entirely abjuring the use of any physical violence for attaining political ends, he has developed this new technique in the history of political revolution, a technique which does not injure the spiritual tradition of India but arises out of it.

It has taken different forms of passive resistance, non-violent non-co operation, and civil disobedience. Every one of them is based on hatred of the wrong and love for the wrongdoer. A *satyāgrahi* is chivalrous to his opponents. The disobedience to law has always to be civil, and

¹ *Evaṁ eva manusyeyu viśeṣo nāsti kaścana*, V, 72, 72-3.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

"civility does not mean the mere outward gentleness of speech cultivated for the occasion, but an inborn gentleness and desire to do the opponent good." In all his campaigns, whenever the enemy was in trouble Gandhi went to his rescue. He condemns all attempts to use the enemy's need as one's opportunity. We should not strike a bargain with Britain when she is in trouble in Europe. During the war he wrote to the Viceroy of India: "If I could make my countrymen retrace their steps, I would make them withdraw all the Congress resolutions and not whisper 'Home rule' or 'Responsible government' during the pendency of the war." Even General Smuts felt the irresistible attraction of Gandhi's methods, and one of his secretaries said to Gandhi: "I do not like your people and I do not care to assist them at all. But what am I to do? You help us in our days of need. How can we lay hands upon you? I often wish that you took to violence like the English strikers and then we would know at once how to dispose of you. But you will not injure even the enemy. You desire victory by self-suffering alone and never transgress your 'self-imposed limits of courtesy and chivalry. And that is what reduces us to sheer helplessness."¹

Twenty years after the war to end war millions of men are again under arms and in peace time armies are mobilizing, fleets are covering the seas and aeroplanes are assembling in the sky. We know that war solves no problems but only makes their solution more difficult. Many Christian men and women are tormented by the arguments for and against war. The pacifist declares that war is a crime that disgraces humanity and there is no justification for defending civilization by the instruments of barbarism. We have no right to impose suffering on men and women with whom we have no quarrel. A nation engaged in war is inspired by a grim determination to defeat and destroy

¹ *Mahatma Gandhi—His Own Story*, p. 247.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

the enemy. It is swept by fear and the passion of hatred. We cannot rain death and destruction on a crowded city in a spirit of love and forgiveness. The whole method of war is one of engaging Satan to reprove Satan. It is contrary to the mind of Jesus, his moral teaching and example. We cannot reconcile killing and Christianity.

The advocates of war argue that, though war is a dreadful evil, on occasions it becomes the lesser of two evils. Practical wisdom consists in a proper appreciation of relative values. We owe obligations to the social community and the State which is its organ. As members of a society, we derive protection of person and property, education and other advantages which give our lives value and interest. Naturally our duty is to defend the State when it is attacked, to preserve the inheritance when it is threatened.

It is this line of argument that is presented to us when we are called upon to maim and kill, to wound and destroy people against whom we have no ill will. Nazi Germany contends that man's principal duty is membership of his State, and his reality, goodness and true freedom the furtherance of its ends. The State has the right to subordinate the happiness of individuals to its own greatness. The great virtue of war is that it kills man's longing, in the weakness of his flesh, for personal liberty. In his speech at the twentieth anniversary of the foundation of the Fascist party, Mussolini said: "The order of the day is more ships, more guns and more aeroplanes at whatever cost and by whatever means, even if we have to wipe out completely what is called civilian life." "From prehistoric days one cry has been borne over the centuries, 'Woe to the unarmed.' " "We desire that nothing more shall be heard of brotherhood, sisterhood, cousinhood or their bastard parenthoods because the relations between states are relations of force and these relations of force are the

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

determining elements of our policy." Mussolini adds, "If the problem is considered on the claim of morality, nobody has the right to throw the first stone." Empire building is like a game of cards. Some Powers get a good hand and play it so well that others are nowhere. When all the profits are in the pocket they turn round and say that gambling is bad and assume an attitude of amazement that others wish to play the old game. It is not right to assume that the idols of race, power and armed force are worshipped only in Central Europe.

The Archbishop of Canterbury, in his speech in the House of Lords during the debate on the 20th of March, pleaded for "the massing of might on the side of the right." "We are driven to this," he argues, "because we are convinced that there are some things that are more sacred even than peace and that these things must be defended." "I cannot believe that it is against the will of Providence that nations should defend things which are so precious to civilization and human welfare." In Gandhi we have that rarest kind of religious man who could face a fanatical, patriotic assembly and say that he would, if he had to, sacrifice even India to the Truth. Gandhi says: "Most religious men I have met are politicians in disguise: I, however, who wear the guise of a politician, am at heart a religious man."

The aim of the religious individual is not to degrade the vision to the demands of the actual but to raise the actual to the pattern of the ideal. Our patriotic allegiances disrupt the spiritual unity of the human family and we maintain our loyalty to the larger community by refusing to engage in war and our loyalty to our State by defending it in religious and human ways. The religious at least, like the Apostles, "ought to obey God rather than men." Our trouble is that society in all countries is in the hands of people who believe in war as an instrument of policy and think of progress in terms of conquest.

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

Man, unless he is sadistic, is happy when he is gentle and merciful. There is joy in creation and misery in destruction. The common soldiers have no hatred for their enemies, but the ruling classes by appealing to their fear, self-interest and pride seduce them from their humanity. People in whom rage and hatred are factitiously produced fight one another because they are simple men trained to obedience. Even then they cannot put rancour in their killing. It is discipline that compels them to do what they hate. The ultimate responsibility lies with the Governments that are implacable and pitiless. They have imprisoned simple people and diminished their humanity. Men who delight in creation are drilled to form armies, navies and air fleets that are meant for destruction. We applaud murder and make mercy a thing of shame. We forbid the teaching of truth and command the spreading of lies. We rob both our own people and strangers of decency, of happiness and of life, and make ourselves responsible for mass murders and spiritual death.

We cannot have peace until all the nations treat with each other in a mood of freedom and friendliness, until we develop a new conception of the integrated social life. The fate of civilization and humanity on this planet is bound up with that deep instinct for the universal values of spirit, freedom, justice and love of man which form the breath of Gandhu's being. In this violent and distracted world Gandhi's non-violence seems to be a dream too beautiful to be true. For him God is truth and love, and God wishes us to be truthful and loving regardless of consequences. A truly religious man takes as much trouble to discover what is right as the prudent man does to discover what will pay, and he does it even if it means the surrender of his dearest interests, individual, racial and national. Only those who have emptied themselves of all selfishness, individual and corporate, have the strength

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

and the courage to say, "May my interests perish, so Thy will be done." Gandhi does not admit the possibility that love of God and of truth and fair dealing can hurt anyone. He is certain that against the rock of moral law world's conquerors and exploiters hurl themselves eventually to their own destruction. It is not even safe to be immoral, for the will to power is self-defeating. When we talk of "national welfare," we assume that we have an inviolate and perpetual right to hold certain territories; and as for "civilization" the world has seen a number of civilizations on which the dust of ages has settled. The jungle has conquered their cities and jackals howl there in the moonlight.

Considerations of "civilization" and "national welfare" are irrelevant to the man of faith. Love is not a matter of policy or calculation. To those who are persuaded by despair that there is no remedy against the violence of the modern world but to escape or destroy, Gandhi says that there is another within the reach of us all, the principle of love which has upheld the spirit of man through many tyrannies and will uphold it still. His satyāgraha may seem to be an ineffectual answer to the gigantic displays of brute force; but there is something more formidable than force, the immortal spirit of man which will not be subdued by noise or numbers. It will break all fetters which tyrants seek to rivet on it. In an interview with a *New York Times* correspondent who asked him in the March crisis for a message to the world, Gandhi recommended simultaneous disarmament on the part of the democratic powers as the solution. "I am certain," he said, "as I am sitting here, that this would open Hitler's eyes and disarm him." The interviewer asked, "Would not that be a miracle?" Gandhi replied: "Perhaps. But it would save the world from the butchery which seems impending." "The hardest metal yields to sufficient heat; even so must

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

the hardest heart melt before the sufficiency of the heat of non-violence. And there is no limit to the capacity of non-violence to generate heat. . . . During my half-century of experience I have not yet come across a situation when I had to say that I was helpless, that I had no remedy in terms of non-violence." Love is the law of human life, its natural necessity. We are approaching a state when this necessity would be manifest, for human life would be impossible if men were to evade and disobey this principle. We have wars simply because we are not sufficiently selfless for a life which does not need wars. The battle for peace must be fought in the heart of the individual. The spirit in him must break the power of pride and selfishness, lust and fear. A new way of life must become the foundation of national life as well as of world order, a way of life which will conserve and foster the true interests of all classes, races and nations. It is the freed men, who have liberated themselves from submission to the blind, selfish will of avidyā, that can work for and establish peace. Peace is a positive demonstration in life and behaviour of certain universal principles and standards. We must fight for them by weapons which do not involve the debasement of moral values or the destruction of human life. In this effort we must be ready to endure whatever suffering comes our way.

In my travels in different parts of the world I have noted that Gandhi's reputation is more universal than that of the greatest statesmen and leaders of nations, and his personality more beloved and esteemed than any or all of them. His name is familiar to such a degree that there is scarcely a peasant or a factory worker who does not consider him to be a friend of human kind. They seem to think that he is likely to restore the golden age. But we cannot summon it, as we would summon, let us say, a passing cab. For we are subject to a thing more powerful

SIR S. RADHAKRISHNAN

than any nation, more humiliating than any conquest, and that is ignorance. Though all our faculties are designed for life, we have allowed them to be perverted in the cause of death. Though the right to happiness is clearly implicit in the creation of humankind, we have allowed that right to be neglected and suffered our energy to be used in the pursuit of power and wealth by which the happiness of the many is sacrificed to the doubtful satisfaction of a few. The world is in slavery to the same error to which you and I are subject. We must strive, not for wealth and power but for the establishment of love and humanity. Freedom from error is the only true liberty.

Gandhi is the prophet of a liberated life wielding power over millions of human beings by virtue of his exceptional holiness and heroism. There will always be some who will find in such rare examples of sanctity the note of strength and stark reality which is missing in a life of general good will, conventional morality or vague aesthetic affectation which is all that many modern teachers have to offer. To be true, to be simple, to be pure and gentle of heart, to remain cheerful and contented in sorrow and danger, to love life and not to fear death, to serve the Spirit and not to be haunted by the spirits of the dead, nothing better has ever been taught or lived since the world first began.

MAHATMA GANDHI: AN ESTIMATE

by HORACE G. ALEXANDER, M.A.
(Selly Oak, Birmingham)

It is not easy to give a just measure of a great man in his lifetime. And in some ways it is even harder if you know

HORACE G. ALEXANDER

him personally. For you must stand a little way off if you are to see a man in true perspective. I have no wish to stand even at arm's length from Mahatma Gandhi. While he lives I find it best to try, by following his thought from week to week in his paper *Harijan*, to keep as close to him as possible.

However, from time to time one must necessarily face the questions which the world asks about him, and try to answer them: and I suppose one main purpose of this volume is to show what impression he makes on some of his contemporaries.

So, having made this brief apology, I will try to say how I see him in the setting of our modern world.

Our age has witnessed the revolt of the disinherited in many countries and in varied forms. The trade union movement and various brands of Socialism have proclaimed the rights of the industrial workers all over the West. Perhaps the International Labour Organization marks one first culmination of this struggle. But in Russia it has taken another great stride: there, the industrial worker is no longer just a man to be reckoned with, one who may turn round and bite you if you treat him too harshly; he is exalted to a specially privileged position. Neither the I.L.O. nor the Soviet quite forgets other classes of workers: the overworked shop assistant, the poor peasant, the fisherman and others; but what they have done for these has been done more or less as an afterthought.

In Germany it was not the orthodox Socialists or the industrial workers who achieved a major revolution. Another party, clever or perhaps less scrupulous, discovered how to win the support of another great section of the population: the *petit bourgeoisie*. They, too, were in despair: their savings having vanished in the inflation, they were crushed between the greater Powers above and below. If there was one class more than another that gave Hitler

HORACE G. ALEXANDER

the victory, it was this class of the *petit bourgeois*—too often forgotten or despised by the disciples of Karl Marx.

But Gandhi from India challenges all these Western revolutions: industrial workers, *petit bourgeois*, intellectuals, property-owners—all these groups who are competing for power in the West tend to forget the fundamental fact that man must eat. He cannot eat machines; he cannot eat trade; he cannot eat school-books; he cannot eat dividends. All those things man can live without. He cannot do without his daily bread or rice. And for this daily food, which civilized, urbanized man accepts so much as a matter of course, he is dependent finally on the hundreds of millions of silent, often semi-starved peasants or farmers in India, in China, in East Europe, in Canada, in the Argentine, in tropical Africa. In all these lands the peasant or the farmer still struggles year by year to use sun and wind and rain (and how often they turn to mock him!) to produce the food by which man lives. They have gone on doing this, generation after generation, for thousands of years, while wars and revolutions have passed over them, destroying the fruits of their labour for the time being, just as drought and flood destroy. And now at last they have found a voice: Mahatma Gandhi.

Among all the millions of Indian people it is hardly possible to find one who does not know the name of Gandhi. Even among the hill tribes or aborigines this friend and champion of the poor is known and loved.

Although he was trained to be a lawyer, he has become a peasant again: not only in his outward life, wearing the simple dress of a peasant, living in a remote and backward and stolidly conservative village that refuses to be cleansed and modernized even by a Mahatma; but even more in his heart and mind. He sees the world with the eyes of a peasant, shrewd, blunt, straightforward, sometimes a little rough, humorous, kindly, patient, and withal deeply reli-

HORACE G. ALEXANDER

gious, seeing life as a whole, aware that unseen powers are at work in ways that we cannot comprehend, though we can often sense and even apprehend them if we are willing to be silent and listen.

I shall never forget the words that Mr. Gandhi said to me when, after travelling for six months in India, I first visited him at Sabarmati in the spring of 1928. "What," I asked him, "shall I say when I get home to England?" "You must tell the English people," he replied, "to get off our backs." Consider how much this means, not only of the end to be achieved but also of the way in which it can be achieved.

For it is not only the end he has in view that distinguishes Mr. Gandhi from the other revolutionary leaders of our age. Perhaps even more important are the means he adopts for that end. In his little book, *Hind Swaraj*, written in 1908, before he had taken any active part in Indian affairs, he wrote: "Kings will always use their kingly weapons. To use force is bred in them. . . . Peasants have never been subdued by the sword, and never will be. They do not know the use of the sword, and they are not frightened by the use of it by others." Therefore, the peasant swaraj, the peasant rule, or peasant freedom, which is Gandhi's aim, must be achieved by means consonant with the end in view. Those who aim to become rulers of men use the sword. It is the weapon of every governing class. And when Socialists or Communists or Nazis or Fascists set out to destroy the "ruling class" by using its own weapons, their success merely replaces one governing class by another. Instead of the sword remaining in the hands of the land-owning or bank-owning or factory-owning class, it passes to members of the Communist party, the Fascist party or the Nazi party. The ordinary citizen is still trampled on. A new governing order climbs on to the backs of the people.

But Gandhi wants to remove the burden of a ruling

HORACE G. ALEXANDER

caste or class from the backs of the peasants once for all, not to push the present rulers off in order that his friends may climb up. So he has spent his life in forging a weapon that can be used by all, the physically weak as well as the physically strong. By learning from him they learn to stand upright on their own feet, no longer bent down under great burdens.

Instead of climbing on to the people's back in order to push the other man off, says Gandhi, you must refuse to help him in any way while he remains where he is. And so, in the end, he must climb down. All his props and supports have gone. He may threaten you with every kind of punishment if you do not continue to support him. He may carry out his threats. But if you have learnt to laugh at imprisonment and death, his threats and even his sword will not move you. He cannot coerce you into action which your conscience tells you is wrong.

There are, of course, immense difficulties to be overcome before this non-violent method of action can be effectively applied. Difficult as it is to drill soldiers to stand up to machine-gun fire, even when they are free to shoot back, it is far harder to drill men to accept every kind of violence without defending themselves. Mr. Gandhi declared thirty years ago that passive resisters (or, as he would now call them, *satyāgrahis*, those who use soul force instead of brute force) must be able "to observe perfect chastity, adopt poverty, follow truth, and cultivate fearlessness." There have been men and women in every age who have learnt the secret of this unconquerable, non-violent life. To read the letters written recently by German evangelical pastors from prison and concentration camp proves that such a character can still be developed in the West as well as in the East. If or when it can be found in multitudes, the true freedom of man, the true community of man, will be in sight.

HORACE G. ALEXANDER

It is noteworthy, too, that Gandhi, who relies on this tremendous self-discipline in his soldiers of peace and freedom, does not talk about "the masses." When you are thinking in terms of cannon-fodder, whether for empire-building or for revolution, you naturally lump human beings into an inhuman "mass." But to Gandhi each one of the "teeming millions" is an individual man or woman, with a personality as sacred as his own. He knows how to make friends with the most ignorant peasant as sincerely as with a man of his own educational level. To him, no man or woman is common or unclean. This is not a beautiful theory that he preaches: it is his daily practice.

In an age when violence has been given a fresh lease of life, when the only hope of man in the West seems to be in the "collective security" of a greater armament than the most determined aggressor can produce; when even an Archbishop can only suggest that "might must be massed on the side of right" as the first step towards ultimate peace, we have before our eyes—if only we would open them and see—one man, of slender physique, precarious health and no outstanding abilities, who is demonstrating in his own life and in the magic power he exerts among his fellow Indians that the human spirit, when lit by a divine fire, is stronger than the mightiest armament.

The meek can still inherit the earth, if only they have faith in their meekness; if only they will cast out the fear of Hitler or of Stalin, and look for their hope to the greatest teacher of our age.

C. F. ANDREWS

THE TRIBUTE OF A FRIEND

by C. F. ANDREWS

(Bolpur, Bengal)

My aim, in this article, will be threefold. First of all, I shall try to draw a rapid outline of the deeper religious aspect of Mahatma Gandhi's character. In the second place, the more directly human side of his personality will be brought into the picture. Thirdly, a brief sketch will be given of what I regard as the two most original contributions which he has made to the progress of mankind in the modern age.

I

There are certain cardinal religious virtues whereon Mahatma Gandhi lays most stress. He holds that through them an abiding work may be done in this world by mortal man in the fear of God.

The first is called *Satya*—Truth. This, with him, is a divine quality, which must be made manifest, not only in word and deed, but also in the secret chambers of the soul. Merely to speak no falsehood is not enough, though it is an essential part of truthfulness. The fountain-head of all truth, with him, lies in the heart.

How great and profound is Truth may be seen from the fact that he uses the word "Satya" for his impersonal name of God. He constantly utters the formula, "Truth is God, and God is Truth," and it is made clear from his daily life how fervently he worships Truth. To swerve, in however small a degree, from Truth, is to be cut off thus far from the divine source and as a necessary consequence to wither away spiritually. It is to walk in darkness instead of in the light. The daily prayer,

C. F. ANDREWS

Lead me from untruth to truth,
Lead me from darkness to light,
Lead me from death to immortality,

expresses this in a threefold manner. Light and darkness, immortality and spiritual death, are but other aspects of this fundamental distinction between Truth and Untruth.

The second virtue which has its source in God is Ahimsā. This word may be literally translated "harmlessness," but it means for Mahatma Gandhi much more than that. It implies the positive quality of doing good. It connotes, in relation to war and bloodshed, active refusal to take part; but it also represents the will to suffer to the uttermost in order to win over those who have done us evil. In its essence, it is God's own Nature, just as Truth is. One of the most ancient and sacred texts is *Ahimsā Paramo Dharma*—"Ahimsā is the supreme religious duty." Therefore Mahatma Gandhi spends his whole life in exploring the possibilities of this supreme religious duty and harmonizing it completely with Satya—Truth. For Ahimsā does not merely imply passive resistance in the face of untruth, but rather its active condemnation—yet without anger, malice, or violence.

The third cardinal virtue on which Mahatma Gandhi lays the greatest stress is Brahmacharya—Chastity. He points out that the very name, in Sanskrit, is derived from the word "Brahma" which means God. He holds, along with much that is very ancient in Hinduism, that by a suppression of the sex function and then its sublimation, a spiritual energy is generated which becomes a divine power, wonderful in its potency. The true follower of Satya and Ahimsā must also be a Brahmachāri, i.e. one who practises complete bodily chastity. Even marriage itself is regarded by Mahatma Gandhi as a concession to human weakness. To put this in other language, complete abstinence from the sex act, together with the elimination

of any thought about it, is regarded by him as one of the highest forms of spiritual life to which man or woman in this world can attain. Here I cannot help feeling that the ascetic principle which is so strong in him has carried him too far, just as I cannot understand his fasting without any limit until the object of his fast is achieved. There is something that repels me here, and I have often told him about it.

Mahatma Gandhi is essentially a man of religion. He can never think of any complete release from evil apart from God's grace. Prayer is, therefore, of the essence of all his work. The very first requirement of one who is a Satyāgrahi—a striver after Truth—is faith in God, whose nature is Truth and Love. I have seen the whole course of his life changed in a few moments in obedience to an inner call from God which came to him in silent prayer. There is a voice that speaks to him, at supreme moments, with an irresistible assurance; and no power on earth can shake him when this call has come home to his mind and will as the voice of God.

More and more he finds the fullest confirmation of what he holds to be the pathway of the spiritual life in reading the Gita, which is a part of his daily act of public worship. « If I have judged him aright from long and intimate experience, there is always something of the Puritan present in his thoughts of God—"as ever in the Great Taskmaster's eye."

II

Let us now turn to the human side. Here there are touches which are very tender and lovable, and these should always be placed side by side with the austerity that I have pictured above.

« Many years ago I had been deeply impressed by the insight of the great writer Romain Rolland, who had

described Mahatma Gandhi as the "St. Paul of our own days." This seemed to me to contain an important truth; for Gandhi, like Paul, comes clearly under the category of the twice-born among men of religion. He experienced at a special moment in his life that tremendous convulsion of the human spirit, which we call "conversion." In his early days he had followed a career at the Bar as a lawyer with great ardour. Success had been a main ambition—success in his profession; success in life as a man; and deeper down in his heart, success as a national leader.

He had gone out to South Africa on a business visit to act as lawyer in an important trial, wherein two Indian merchants were engaged in litigation. Hitherto, he had only a distant knowledge of the colour bar and had never considered what it might mean to himself if he was personally attacked and insulted. But as he journeyed from Durban and reached Maritzburg this dreadful experience came to him suddenly in all its cruel nakedness. He was thrown out of his compartment by the railway official, though he carried a first-class ticket; and the mail train went on without him. It was late at night and he was in an utterly strange railway station, knowing no one. There, all night long, as he sat shivering with cold, after enduring this insult, he wrestled within himself, whether to take the next steamer back to India, or to go through to the bitter end, suffering what his own people had to suffer. Before the morning the light came to his soul. He determined by God's grace to play the man. More humiliations were soon to be heaped upon him of the same character and in South Africa he was never without them. But he had put his hand to the plough and he would never turn back.

I heard him tell the story of that night to Dr. Mott last November. He made clear, as he told it, that this was the turning-point from which his own new life began.

C. F. ANDREWS

There are other qualities in Mahatma Gandhi that have their counterpart in the rugged figure of the Apostle Paul—a faith in God that will never allow him to yield to man; a sense of the black horror of sin, especially sins of the flesh; a severity towards those whom he loves most dearly, lest they should fall short of his own earnest longing for them, and yet withal a pathetic tenderness of heart which makes him long for a touch of human sympathy whenever he is misunderstood.

There is also something more in him which comes near to St. Francis of Assisi, for Gandhi also has taken Poverty as his bride. He might truly be called to-day "the Little Poor Man of Segaoon." For he lives there, among the depressed and poor villagers, sharing their burdens with them. On two occasions I have seen him when this likeness to St. Francis became luminously clear to me.

The former of these was in the still afterglow of a dark evening twilight at the Ashram (retreat) called Phoenix, near Durban. The strain of a long day of unwearied ministry among the poor was over, and Mahatma Gandhi was seated under the open sky, tired almost beyond human endurance, but even at such a time he nursed a sick child on his lap who clung to him with a pathetic affection. A Zulu girl from the school on the Hill beyond the Ashram was seated there also. He asked me to sing "Lead kindly Light" as the darkness grew deeper and deeper. Even then, though he was much younger, his frail body was worn with suffering that could never be laid aside even for a moment: yet his spirit within was radiant when the hymn broke the silence, with its solemn close,

And with the morn those angel faces smile,
Which I have loved long since and lost awhile.

I can remember how we all sat in silence when the hymn was finished, and how he then repeated to himself those

two lines which I have quoted. The other scene was in Orissa, near to the place where I am now writing. He had been very near to death; for a sudden and complete exhaustion had come over him and his blood pressure had mounted perilously high. On receiving a telegram, I had travelled all through the night to be at his side. When I reached him he lay there facing the sunrise, after a restless night. A man from one of the lowest grades of the untouchables suddenly drew near to him in supplication just as we began our talk. In a moment his own sickness seemed to have vanished and his whole heart was torn with agony by the cruel humiliation which had reduced the man who prostrated himself before us almost to a sub-human level.

III

The two things whereby Mahatma Gandhi's name will live, hundreds of years hence, are (1) his khaddar programme, and (2) his practice of Satyāgraha.

(1) He has been the first, in this modern, machine age, to revive among the agricultural people of the world on a vast scale the practice of village industries. He had set it forward as a means of giving employment to millions of people during those seasons of the year when it is impossible for them to work in the fields and agricultural work is at a standstill. In India this unemployment period extends to four or five months every year. In the old days, when there was no power machinery, hand-spinning and weaving and other village industries used to occupy the time of each member of the family down to the very youngest, and very durable fabric, for everyday use, was spun and woven.

It would not be wrong to say that half, at least, of the human race has been reduced to this condition of seasonal unemployment chiefly owing to the influx of machine-

C. F. ANDREWS

made cloth, which by its cheapness has very gradually destroyed the home-made village industries.

Gandhi has been the first to have a burning faith that a revival of cottage industries of all kinds is still possible whereby the villagers themselves may be saved from moral as well as physical starvation. He had been able to spread in millions of human minds a new hope in this direction. His genius has not merely touched India. Already in China, under the stress of war, the peasants have started once more to grow cotton and spin and weave it into cloth. It is also quite possible that in the long, dark evenings of the winter, in the sub-arctic regions in Canada and elsewhere, similar cottage industries may be revived.

(2) By his supremely original and personal advocacy of Ahimsā he has shown to the world that it is possible to-day to overcome even the violence of war by the purely voluntary suffering of corporate moral resistance called Satyāgraha. In South Africa he was triumphantly successful in this direction. General Smuts gave him all the terms he asked for, after he had led his "ragged army" of civil resisters across the Drakensberg mountains into the Transvaal. General Smuts acknowledged that such a method of moral warfare, waged without weapons of violence, was irresistible.

It is not possible to deal at length with these great subjects at the end of this paper, but others are likely to write more in this volume. Let me conclude by going back to the analogy of St. Francis that I have already mentioned. He too wore, as his daily robe, the rough homespun of the village people. Thus in his own times he brought the homespun back into honour and repute before the eyes of men. St. Francis also went weaponless and ready to suffer into the armed ranks of the Saracens in order to bring peace to the warring armies by his message of suffering love. The same *ideas*, therefore, were in the

C. F. ANDREWS

heart of St. Francis which Mahatma Gandhi cherishes. They were thus kindred spirits. But now Mahatma Gandhi has gone further still, and his two greatest "experiments with Truth" (as he would rightly call them) of khaddar and Satyāgraha have been taken up into the corporate life of mankind. They have already been put into practice on a scale never known before in human history. In this way he has been more than any other personality now living a herald of peace and good will to mankind.

THE ESSENCE OF GANDHIJI

by GEORGE S. ARUNDALE
(President, Theosophical Society,
Adyar, Madras)

I feel it a privilege to be asked to participate in a volume commemorating Mr. Gandhi's attainment of his seventieth birthday. Of course, no volume can commemorate his great and unique services to India. Even the people of India to-day cannot commemorate these. Only posterity can judge, unbiassed by the times in which Mr. Gandhi now lives. But a volume such as this can usefully appraise various aspects of his faithfulness, even though it be the work of his contemporaries.

For my own part, three qualities are outstanding in his life such as I have watched it—first, and most important of all, his pure simplicity; second, his direct and keen appreciation of his own fundamentals; third, his absolutely unassuming fearlessness.

There he is, wherever he is, leading a simple ordered life such as all can live, howsoever they may be circum-

GEORGE S. ARUNDALE

stanced. He lives with the blazing light of fame ever shining upon him. In the very midst of the glare he lives as most of us would do well to live. His soul is bare to the world. His habits are ever the same. And he knows how to use the power of the Silence, as few of the rest of us know how to use it.

His life is an example that can be followed in its details of everydayness, for it reduces the fussy complexities of the world into their original God-given simplicities, whereby alone shall happiness and prosperity become restored to the human and sub-human family.

I do not for a moment suggest we should follow the letter of his living, but I do insist that we might do well to follow the spirit of it.

Then he does somehow manage to show a way to light out of darkness. He sees where a light is, and points to it. And even if some of us be unable to see that particular light, at least we see his light; and the light of another, however different from our own, helps us to find our own. After all, there is but one light, even though each one of us rings different changes upon it.

Some of the light he sheds I am unable to use. I should look elsewhere for the laying of many of my own emphases. But his emphases help me to discover my own emphases. So am I thankful for his direct and keen appreciation of his own fundamentals; for one who follows his own fundamentals, as Gandhiji follows his, wonderfully stimulates others to follow their own, possibly entirely different, fundamentals. It is not opinion that matters so much, however learned, but crystal-clear sincerity.

Finally, his, what I should almost like to term casual, fearlessness. I like it all the more for its casualness. There is no tremendous preparation, no girding-up of loins—he would not have much to gird up in any case—no ceremonial vigils, no tamasha of any kind. An occasion for fearlessness

GEORGE S. ARUNDALE

arises, and in instant response the light of his fearlessness shines forth.

And what I honour most is the fact that he does not raise a great cry and summon multitudes to follow him. He may make an announcement as to the form a particular fearlessness shall take—in any case he is thinking only of something that has to be done, and that he can do no other, just as Martin Luther declared that he could do no other than that which he did, and had to do. And then Gandhiji goes ahead. If anyone follows, well and good. If nobody follows, then also well and good. So often is it true that he who knows how to go alone, which is to say, goes alone when there are none to follow because he must go at all costs, has many more victories to his credit than he who must organize a movement before he can set going a Cause.

Gandhiji's nature is to be fearless, so his fearlessness is natural. And because it is natural, it is gracious, it is chivalrous to all who are in his way, it is a fearlessness which makes friends and not foes, which makes peace and not war.

I have not tried to appraise Gandhiji's political theories and activities. To tell the truth I care little what they are. After all, they are more means than ends. And I might well conceive it my duty—rightly or wrongly conceived, who can tell?—actively to oppose one or more of them in honour of my own sincerities, such as they are. What I value most in anyone is his sincerity, his devotion, his courage, his selflessness, his indifference to praise or blame or to public opinion, his harmlessness, his brotherliness. He who gives these to the world gives to it infinitely more than those who give laws and schemes, doctrines and dogmas.

We need in the world to-day men and women afire with the spirit of universal brotherhood, afire with the nobility

GEORGE S. ARUNDALE

of their simple natures, afire with the compelling urge of ideals which mean far more to them than even life itself. They may be right or they may be wrong. But their hearts are ever beating to the mighty rhythm of Compassion.

Such a man is Gandhi. Need more be said?

THE SERVANT OF INDIA

*by THE RT. REV. V. S. AZARIAH, M.A., D.C.L.
(Bishop of Dornakal, India)*

I am glad to join with many others to offer Gandhiji my congratulations on his seventieth birthday.

No one in this generation has played such a prominent part in the life of the Indian people as Gandhiji. In fact, India has been commonly known in Europe as "the land of Gandhi." I cannot forget my little conversation with the Italian attendant at the porch at Vatican Palace. After I signed my name and gave my address, he said to me: "India?" "Yes," I said. "Gandhi?" When this came with a smile, I had to say yes, knowing he meant the country of Gandhiji. This was again and again my experience in Italy nine years ago. Suddenly visiting a negro elementary school on the roadside in a southern state of the United States of America two years ago, the head master asked me to say a few words to the children on India. I had to say where I came from and so forth, and was rather embarrassed to say anything intelligible to those children and finished all I had to say well inside of five minutes. The head master then suggested that the children might ask me any question on India. A girl in the upper class jumped up and asked: "Tell us about Mr. Gandhi!" You can imagine my surprise

THE RT. REV. V. S. AZARIAH

at such a question coming from such a group at such a remote distance from India. Gandhiji is rightly recognized throughout the world as the greatest personage of India, as the irrepressible champion of her liberties and as the highest embodiment of her genius and spirit.

We in India know what this spirit consists in: a sensitiveness to the supernatural and a frank recognition of man's dependence upon God in all details of life; the recognition of the infinite priority of moral and spiritual claims to the material; and an open disdain of physical and creature comforts, in the pursuit, and for the sake, of moral and spiritual attainments. No one who knows India will for a moment doubt that the greatness of Mr. Gandhi is due to the greatness of these ideals.

All India owes him a debt of gratitude for calling India's sons back to these ideals and holding these up consistently before the whole world, under criticism and ridicule, at a time when these ideals are in danger of being discounted almost everywhere. In an age of growing materialism, Mr. Gandhi has lifted up for recognition and imitation "Spirit-ism."

Mr. Gandhi has rendered another notable service to India, which deservedly entitles him to eternal gratitude of all lovers of India, and that is his service for the outcastes. While at various periods in the past, religious reformers have attacked the caste system, no one has so successfully revolutionized the attitude of India's thinking men and women towards untouchability as Gandhiji. The open sore of India is, to our shame let it be said, still an open sore. It refuses to be healed because of its association with traditional Hindu religion. But the conscience of Hindu India has been awakened, caste's main citadels have been shaken, it is now only a matter of time before they will crumble to the dust. Opinions may differ as to the methods Mr. Gandhi has followed in attacking the evil.

THE RT. REV. V. S. AZARIAH

All may not agree—even of the classes benefited—in the results achieved. It is, however, undoubtedly true that the attitude of India to the problem of the out-caste has changed during the last twenty years, yea, ten years; and not a little of this result must be recognized as due to Gandhiji.

We congratulate him to-day; we wish him many more years of leadership and service to our much loved India.

GANDHI, AS BRIDGE AND RECONCILER

by ERNEST BARKER, M.A., D.Lit.
(Professor of Political Science,
Cambridge University)

I have two memories of Mr. Gandhi. The first is of a night in November 1931, when he stayed at my house during a visit to England, at the time of the Round Table Conference. The second is of a sunny morning in the middle of December 1937, when I was driven by an Indian friend to call on him at a villa by the sea, a little to the north of Bombay, where he was recuperating from an illness under the rustle of tall palm trees.

I have vivid recollections of his visit to Cambridge. I joined with him and Miss Slade at prayers in his room; and he came down to our sitting-room, after his evening meal, and talked with us as he turned his spinning-wheel. Some of our talk was about simple things (I remember his being interested in what I had to say about the place of football in English life, and about the curious social division between the Rugby and the Association game); but we

ERNEST BARKER

went, in the main, into deeper issues. One of our themes was Plato. I thought that he had a Platonic feeling that governing and administrative persons should live on a simple pittance, content with the opportunity of service, and not expecting great rewards. I tried to argue that government had to carry prestige, and that in order to carry prestige it must be surrounded by a certain amount of pomp and circumstance. I do not remember that we reached any agreement; but I know that I felt that I was arguing on a lower plane. Another theme which I particularly remember was the theme of the defence of India. I was arguing that peace had to be kept; that the threat of invasion or of marauding bands had to be met; that this entailed a defence force; and that, for the time being, this defence force should be guaranteed its necessary expenses, and not be made dependent on the recurrent votes, which might be adverse or at any rate exiguous, of an Indian assembly. Mr. Gandhi used a metaphor in reply. "Imagine," he said, "a village which suffers from the depredations of the animals of the jungle. A benevolent authority offers to erect a great wall of defence round the village, to secure the lives and property of the villagers. But the villagers find that the cost of the wall entails a grinding taxation which depresses their life so low that it is hardly worth living. Would they not say, 'Better the risks of the depredations, which we well know, than the certainty of a standard of life which is below our capacity of endurance'?"

The two themes of which we spoke brought home to me two of the lessons which Mr. Gandhi has taught—the lesson of love, and of service rendered in love; and the lesson of non-violence. I knew that I was face to face with a prophet; but I found that I could not surrender the instincts of a north-country Englishman (perhaps they are the instincts of *any* Englishman)—the instinct which sug-

ERNEST BARKER

gests that good service deserves good payment and is promoted by good payment; the instinct which suggests that peace and order involve a struggle against war and disorder, and have to be maintained by efforts for their defence. But if I could not surrender my instincts, I had to recognize the presence of something higher than my instincts—if only men were ready for its acceptance. (Perhaps if one could believe that they were ready, and could get others to agree with one's belief, they *would* be ready. I admitted that; but I found it difficult to summon up my own belief to the point.) After Mr. Gandhi went away, I fell to thinking about the different elements that met in him. There was the St. Francis, vowed to the simple life of poverty, in harmony with all creation and in love with all created things. There was the St. Thomas Aquinas, the thinker and the philosopher, able to sustain high argument and to follow the subtleties of thought in all their windings. There was also the practical man of affairs, with a legal training to back and strengthen his sense for affairs—the man who could come down from mountain tops to guide with shrewd advice transactions in the valley. We are all of us complicated; and Mr. Gandhi seemed to me more complicated than most of us are. He had a rich and intricate personality. It would have been a simple thing if he had just been a St. Francis. But would it have been as good a thing, or a thing so useful and so serviceable to his fellow-countrymen and the world? When I thought about the matter, I was inclined to say "No." The mixture was the essence. What he was to the world, and what he could do for the world, depended on his being more things than one.

That leads me to the final and fundamental thing which I should desire to say. I have spoken of the St. Francis and the St. Thomas mixed with the man of practical affairs and legal training. I might have said, more accurately and

ERNEST BARKER

more justly, that the mixture was one between a great Indian tradition of devout and philosophic religion and the Western tradition of civil and political liberty in the life of the community. Because there has been this mixture, Mr. Gandhi has been a great bridge. He has been able to commend politics to his fellow-countrymen in no secular form, and with no divorce from their mere religious tradition; he has been able to commend himself, and the cause of his country, to the British people, as something far beyond the stature of a political agitator or a matter of political agitation. Nor is it merely to his fellow-countrymen, or to the British people, that he has presented himself as a bridge and a reconciler. He has caught the attention and focused the interest of the Western peoples at large. One who could mix a spiritual and a temporal devotion, without injury to either, could not but be a great and arresting figure of our days.

I should therefore celebrate in Mr. Gandhi the man who could mix the spiritual with the temporal, and could be at the same time true to both. I should also celebrate the man who could be a bridge between the East and the West, and thereby could render one of the greatest services which it is possible to render to the cause of international understanding. Nor can I forget the man who could understand, and proclaim, the homely and intimate necessities of his country's life. His spinning-wheel is a symbol of that understanding. To visit an Indian village (and India is a continent of villages) is to see the crying need of the villagers for a fuller life and a wider engagement of faculties. If industry can be brought into the villages (and not merely established in the cotton-mills round Bombay and the jute-mills north of Calcutta), it will be the redemption of the villages, and, since the villages are the vastly preponderant part of India, the redemption of India—on the plane of secular economic life. It will always be counted

ERNEST BARKER

as one of the great services of Mr. Gandhi that he laboured at that redemption.

These are the thoughts that come to me, from what I have seen or read or heard. I wish that I knew more. But, on such knowledge as I have, I should say that Mr. Gandhi had laboured to teach his countrymen, and had helped to teach the world at large, three things—to work in love, and for love; to work without violence; and to work with the hands, and not merely with the brain, for the building of a full life which fully engages the faculties.

"A LIGHT UPON HIS NAME"

by LAURENCE BINYON, C.H., D.LITT.
(London)

I know but little of India except through her art. And since I feel that without studying her political problems at first hand in the country itself one cannot form a judgment of any value upon the thorny tangle they seem to present, I could not presume to say anything of Mr. Gandhi's political career. I dare say that I might not be able to follow him in the details of his policy; but in a time which history will surely record as in many ways a disgrace to mankind, I feel more strongly every day that it is the things of the mind and the things of the spirit, and what flows from them into the active life, that matter more than anything for this shaken and distracted world; it is for these central, permanent things that, as I conceive, Mr. Gandhi stands, and because of this there is a light upon his name.

MRS. PEARL S. BUCK

"A WAY OF LIVING"

by MRS. PEARL S. BUCK
(New York City)

The name of Gandhi even in his lifetime has passed beyond the meaning of an individual to the meaning of a way of living in our troubled modern world. In the midst of unrestrained and evil force, what for me has been of the greatest significance is the reaffirmation of this way of living. I am glad to be able to say here upon this page that Mr. Gandhi's steady persistence in his chosen way has given me, among millions of others, courage to resist, by that greatest of all resistances, unconquerable, unwavering personal determination, the growth of tyranny in the world. I send my thanks, and my fullest appreciation.

MAHĀTMĀ

by ANANDA K. COOMARASWAMY, M.A., D.Sc.
(Museum of Fine Arts,
Boston, Mass., U.S.A.)

The term "Mahātmā" has been much abused, but has precise and intelligible meanings and a long history. Like many other of the technical terms of Indian metaphysics, the word has acquired vague or sentimental connotations; partly because in our general ignorance of all traditional philosophy and even of Christian theology we are no longer able to distinguish spirit from soul or essence from existence; and still more because of the absolute values we mistakenly attach to our boasted "personality," or rather,

individuality, and consequent worship of "genius," in which we see much rather a deified humanity than the operation of an impersonal Spirit. It is with these preoccupations that we think of "Mahātmā" as meaning a "Great Man," or "Great Soul," rather than one who is "in the spirit," and more than man.

At a point already far removed from the beginning we find in a Buddhist Sutra (A. I. 249) the distinction drawn between the "great" and "petty" selves, *mahātmā* and *alpātmā*;¹ in another passage these "selves" of a man are distinguished as "fair" and "foul" (*kalyāṇa*, *pāpa*). The foul or petty self is the composite of psycho-physical factors by which a man can be referred to as this man so-and-so and, as such, corresponds to all that is elsewhere defined as *anātmā* ("not very self") and of which it is so constantly affirmed that "that is not my Self" (*na mama so ātmā*). The way of this petty self is mean and painful (*alpa-duḥkha-vihāri*); it is "undeveloped in stature, character, will and prescience." The little self is in all respects causally determined; whatever it does or wills is predetermined by what has been done or willed in a beginningless heredity of "former habitations": "we" can neither be what or as or when we will, but only what we are. The little self is mortal, subject in life to inveteracy and sickness, and destroyed without residue at the natural term of life. Our other and Eminent Self, the Mahātmā, can hardly be described except in terms which are negations of all the limiting definitions by which the little self is circumscribed. In terms of our first text, a man can be thought of as "Mahātmā" who is "of developed stature, character, will and prescience, un-emptied-out, and to whose way there are no boundaries" (*bhāvita-kāya*, -*sīla*, -*citta*, -*prajñā*, *aprarikta mahātmā apramāṇa-vihāri*).

¹ To make it easier for the reader, I have given all Pali words in their Sanskrit form.

The whole distinction corresponds to that of Person from animal man (*puruṣa* from *paśu*) in AA. II. 3. 2; to that of those who have not found the Self and for whom there is therefore no motion-at-will here or hereafter from those who have found the Self and are therefore movers-at-will whether here or hereafter in CU. VIII. 1. 6; to the Confucian distinction of the "Princely Sage" (*chün tzu*) from the "petty man" (*hsiao jén*); and to St. Bernard's distinction of *proprium* from *esse*. These two "selves" are again the "lives" (*anima, psyche*) of John xii. 25, "He that loveth his life shall lose it," one of these selves being that "life" that a man must hate if he would be "my disciple" (Luke xiv. 26), the "ego" of St. Paul's *vivo autem, jam non ego*, "I live; yet not 'I'" (Gal. ii. 20). In "Who-soever will lose his life for my sake" (Luke ix. 24) this same *psyche* to be lost corresponds to all that is implied by "psyche" in our word "psychology." To have found the *ātman* is to have ceased to be anyone.

In *mahātmā*, *mahā* is simply "great," "eminent": and *ātman*, like Greek *pneuma*, primarily "spirit" (as distinguished from soul and body). But because the spirit is the real being of the man, as distinguished from the accidents of this being, its temporal manifestation as So-and-so characterized by particular qualities and properties, *ātman* in reflexive usage acquires the secondary value "self," whatever physical (*hylic*), psychic or spiritual (*pneumatic*) self we may intend. It is precisely at this point that the fundamental significance of the traditional and so often repeated injunction, "Know thyself," emerges, for we have "forgotten what we are," and taking pride in being "someone," are of those to whom the words of the Song of Songs, "If thou knowest not thyself, depart," can be applied. The answer to the question "Who art thou?" is the password demanded at the Gate: it is only to those who can answer in accordance with the "That art thou" of the Upanisads that the

welcome will be extended, "Come in, O myself"; none who answers by a personal or family name is admitted. The condition of deification is an eradication of all otherness.

The term Mahātmā as name of God, and as a designation of the state of being that can be verified only by the man who is altogether emancipated from himself, is one, or one and many (CU. VII. 26. 2; SB. X. 5. 2. 17) in distinction without difference, fusion without confusion. The Mahātmā is the "Great Unborn Spirit" (*mahān aja ātmā*, BU. IV. 4. 22: *ātmā mahān*, KU. III. 10), the Supernal Sun (MU. VII. 11. 6), the Spiritual-Essence of all that is (RV. I. 115. 1). The Great Self is the only Witness, Agent and Knower, at the same time immanent and transcendent. To have found Him is to have abandoned all the peripheries of our existence and returned to its centre of being. Hinduism and Buddhism affirm, what is not denied in Christianity, the possibility of the attainment of perfection here and now; as must be, because the state of perfection cannot itself be connected with time. In "That art thou," the present tense is absolute; it is not the truth, but its verification that has to do with time. When the verification has been made, the relation of "individual" spirits to the spiritual Deity is that of rays to the source of illumination from or into which they can pass in or out at will. To have become such a ray of the Light of Lights is divine filiation, for the Sun's rays are his offspring.

To call a man Mahātmā is then to say that he has been liberated in this life (*jivan mukta*, corresponding to the Buddhist *dṛṣṭe dharme vimukta*) or in some life. It is thus that the word is used in BG., e.g. VIII. 15, "these Mahātmās that have come to Me, never again return to birth, to this temporal abode of ill, they have reached the last fulfilment," and IX, 13, "Mahātmās, devoted unto Me with single mind, knowing Me the unchanging source of all

beings, that have taken on the nature of God"; Krishna, the speaker, being himself the immanent Spirit (*ibid.*, X. 20).

Our object in the present article has been to explain the word *Mahātmā* historically. The name has been given to Gandhi-jī by common consent, perhaps in the general sense of "Saint." There can be no doubt that in some of its connotations, that of selflessness (with a higher sense than that of a mere unselfishness), for example, it can be properly applied to him. But we have not had in mind to discuss the applicability of the term in its full meaning to any individual: for that must ever remain a secret between himself and God.

TWO MEETINGS WITH GANDHI

by LIONEL CURTIS, M.A.
(All Souls' College, Oxford)

I have a vivid recollection of my first meeting with Mr. Gandhi about 1903. I was then a young official under whose department came the vexed and difficult question of Indian immigration. I have since been privileged to make a large number of Indian and Chinese friends, but Mr. Gandhi was I believe the first Oriental I met. He was dressed in European clothes except for his Indian cap and gave me the impression of being an exceedingly able young lawyer. He started by trying to convince me of the good points in the character of his countrymen, their industry, frugality, their patience. I remember that after listening to him I said, "Mr. Gandhi, you are preaching to the converted. It is not the vices of Indians that Europeans in this country fear but their virtues." In my subsequent

LION'L CURTIS

dealings with Mr. Gandhi, the characteristic which most impressed me was his tenacity of purpose. I have since come to think that few qualities count more in this world than tenacity.

Years later, about Christmas 1916, I again met Mr. Gandhi in the Congress camp at Lucknow. The contrast he made with the smart young Johannesburg Attorney I had known in the Transvaal is something I shall never forget. He was now dressed in a ragged Indian garb, and had on his face, which was considerably aged, the marks of an ascetic. The morning was bitterly cold and we talked by a brazier, over which he was trying to get some warmth into his hands as he spoke. He was doing his best to explain to me the inner meaning of caste as viewed by the Indian mind.

Few men, if any, in my generation have commanded so great a following, have so changed the course of events, and so influenced thought in more than one continent than Mr. Gandhi. I must humbly confess my own failure to guess that such spiritual powers were latent in the alert young lawyer I met in 1903.

GANDHI AND THE CONGRESS

by BHAGAVAN DAS, M.A., D.Litt
(Benares)

The tempestuous history of mankind during the first four decades, now closing, of the twentieth century after Christ is written around a score or so of names. Less than half of the bearers of these names are alive to-day. Mahatma Gandhi is not only one of these, but he is unique, sui

generis, even among these; because he is the solitary apostle of *non-violent spirituality* in politics and economics. One cannot readily think of another greater or even equal moral force in Indian history since the Buddha. When the "present" has become the "past," and the overwhelming importance which the "present" always possesses has shrunk into due proportions, it is possible that the future historian may be able to mention names comparable with his; comparable on the whole, taking into account the very different settings and purposes of the different periods. To-day, Mahatma Gandhi's personality stands out unique.

Naturally, therefore, the admiration with which he has inspired me is very great. I feel a great reverence also for his quality of *tapas*, his internal fire and fervour, ascetic purity, intensity of aspiration and resolve, mortification and subjugation of the flesh (all which is meant by *tapas*): such *sāttvika*, refined "mortification and subjugation" as is known to ancient Indian, and also early and medieval Christian, and later Muslim, religious tradition; because that *tapas* is ennobled, rationalized, sanctified by single-minded and unremitting employment of the soul-force, *ātma-bala*, won by it, to the uplifting of India.

Thus, then, I feel very great admiration for Mahatma Gandhi's marvellous political leadership of India; deep reverence for his ascetic purity and benevolence to all; and admiration as well as reverence for that astonishing self-control, that deliberate, premeditated, perpetual "self-guidance," *dhira-tā* (*dhiyam irayati*), which compels one to say of all his public actions, in all the powerfully "dramatic" situations, the trials and tribulations, which are always arising around him and for him, that

He ne'er did sordid thing or mean
On any memorable scene.

His unfailing dignity and courtesy, repose of soul, tireless activity of mind and body in the service of India, according to his inner lights—these have commanded the admiration of his greatest adversaries and often induced them to accede to his wishes.

Feeling thus, it seems to me desirable that I should not content myself with offering merely a handful of flowers on this occasion. Of such, Mahatma Gandhi may perhaps have become tired by this time. I shall, therefore, venture to record some critical observations, such as I have been placing (together with some suggestions) before him and the Indian people from time to time during the last fifteen years and more, in connexion with his great work. The observations which I wish to make, in connexion with the survey of Mahatma Gandhi's re-vitalization of India, are all based on the traditional ancient wisdom, and do not proceed from any presumptuous notion of my own superior intelligence.

The world-situation in general and the Indian situation in particular

The human world came out of a four years' terrible purgatory in 1918. But, unchastened, it is again reeling on the brink of the hell of Armageddon. Spain has been devastated by civil war, which has ended with the victory of Fascism and Franco. China is fighting Japan in a life-and-death struggle. India, subjugated, impoverished, de-spiritualized, is engaged in a non-violent politico-economic struggle. But she also suffers from periodic communal riots which are the reverse of non-violent. This is the consequence of the machinations of malevolent religio-political Indian "leaders" and of the political diplomacy of Britain. Both religions have been perverted, distorted, corrupted from their true essentials by their custodians, who have made of religion a profitable profession. This

root-cause has been taken advantage of by the British "diplomats." That the two communities have no common human interests, that one can profit only at the expense of the other, is only a less intelligent replica of the Western notion, that one country or nation or race can prosper only by domineering over and enslaving another country or race or nation—a notion which is the legitimate corollary of the much-boasted discovery of the Law of Struggle for Existence, and of the forgetting and ignoring of the far more important and beneficent Law of Alliance for Existence. As the result, the whole atmosphere of India is pervaded by a miasma of mutual hatred and suspicion, and life is one long alarm for every honest, good, peace-minded Hindu as well as Muslim. The late Hon. Mr. G. K. Gokhale pointed out, long ago, that "any two sides, taken together, of the triangle of forces, Hindu, Muslim, British, are obviously greater than the third." Accordingly, in the outcome of the three Round Table Conferences held in London (1930-1933), the malignant system of separation of the two communities was arranged by the confirmation and perpetuation of separate electorates. As logical corollary, the evil spirit of *communalism* has been infused into every department of the *public services*, highest to lowest, by promoting the thought of communal ratios and proportions in employment. These services naturally have intelligence and information above the average of the population, and hold all the immense power of official authority in their hands; and power means almost everywhere, to-day, power to hurt and hinder rather than to help the weak, the good, the honest.

The communal problem has become the most acute problem of India since separate electorates were instituted by British diplomacy; at first, for municipal and district boards, in the second decade of this century, and then for the legislatures, in the third.

In an interview given to an American newspaper correspondent on March 23, 1939, at New Delhi, the question was put to Mahatma Gandhi: "Is India making progress to your liking?" The Mahatma became thoughtful, and then said: "Yes, it is. I get frightened sometimes, but there is progress at the bottom, and that progress is sound. The greatest difficulty is Hindu-Muslim differences. That is a serious obstacle. There, I cannot say, I see visible progress. But the trouble is bound to solve itself. The mass-mind is sound, if only because it is unselfish. The political grievances of both the communities are identical; so are the economic grievances."

It is perfectly true that these grievances are identical. Then why has he not succeeded in convincing the two communities of this, and uniting them? "The trouble is bound to solve itself." No doubt it will; but as in Spain, or peacefully? Is it possible to do anything to bring about the latter form of solution? "The mass-mind is sound, if only because it is unselfish." Is not this too unqualified? The peasantry is the largest "mass" in India, as in China, Japan, and the rest of Asia. It is everywhere intensely "individualist," or "selfish." But granting that it is comparatively "sound" and "unselfish," is it also duly informed and educated in respect of the essentials of religion and of the main few fundamental principles of right social organization? A peaceful solution of the trouble by itself is not likely. To some of us, it seems that only by diligent spread of knowledge of the common essentials of all religions, and of the fundamental principles of right social organization, will the solution of the communal problem be possible.

The Position of the Congress

The politico-economic struggle of the Congress, too, though largely non-violent physically, is not such psychically. Corruption of various kinds is rife within the

Congress. At elections for offices within the Congress organization, ballot-boxes have been looted, burnt, carried away, lathis have been used, serious hurt inflicted, in a number of cases; a person has been killed outright, in one or two; as in Britain, more or less, until not so very long ago. Mahatma Gandhi's own writings in his weekly, the *Harijan*, amply attest this. No other evidence is needed. If it were, the speeches made in support of the "anti-corruption" resolution, passed unanimously, on December 3, 1938, at Tripuri, by the Congress in open session, supply it in ample measure. The bright side of the picture, however, is that, considering the immense areas and numbers of electors involved, and the fact that these are "first experiments," there have not been many more such regrettable occurrences.

The Cause of the Disease

Why have all the fine measures for awakening the mass-mind, which, on the whole and in the circumstances, were the best available, as proved by their marvellous success in bringing about that awakening—why have these measures of Mahatma Gandhi not succeeded as they should have? Clearly, there has been some *very serious lack* in the leadership. Let it be repeated here, that the method of non-violent non-co-operation or civil disobedience, or however else it may be called, is undoubtedly the best, in India's present circumstances. By that method, Mahatma Gandhi has performed the miracle of endowing the Indian people with a will, and also a potent weapon. That method is in keeping with the ancient spirit and traditions of the people. *Dharna*, i.e. *dhāraṇā*, *prāy-opa-vrēshana*, *uparāsa*, *ājñā-bhangā*, *dēshatyāga*, *rāja-tyāga*, *rājā tātra vigarhyate*; sitting down at the doorway of the oppressor with fixed resolve to die unless the wrong is redressed, "fasting unto death," "civil disobedience," "giving up the country,"

"renouncing the ruler," "public censure of the ruler," etc., are some of the non-violent forms of resisting abuse of authority, which are mentioned in the old books; though armed war is also permitted, nay, enjoined, by them, in special circumstances, after peaceful methods have failed.

It is the *lack of something more* which has caused all these noble efforts to miss their mark. Because of the lack of an indispensable ingredient, the recipe has failed to cure the disease, or even to alleviate it thus far. Mahatma Gandhi and the "High Command" never chalked out the broad outlines of any plan on which legislation could and should be conducted by the Ministries, in concert, consistently, for the promotion of the general welfare. They have been waiting for a future Constituent Assembly to do it for them. Of course, this dissatisfaction with "their own" Ministries is stronger in some Provinces than in others. But it is present in all, for one reason or another. The reasons vary with the Provinces. Some of us have been endeavouring, for many years now, to draw the attention of the "High and low Commands" of the Congress, and of the public generally, to this great lack, and also to suggest ways for supplying it. But so far in vain. Perhaps the conflict that has arisen within the Congress now will compel the "leaders" and the public to turn their attention to it. It will have far-reaching consequences. It will ruin all that the Congress has gained by twenty years of self-denial and sacrifice, if not allayed. It can be abated, and replaced by Unity, only by supplying the great lack in the programme. So only will the newly gained Will be saved from infantile diseases, internal fevers, suicide. So only will that national Will be endowed with that Unity, the absence of which is menacing it with premature death.

Of course, while it is necessary to say the above, we must not forget that the Congress Ministries are working very hard, and are making great efforts to abolish the

drink evil, spread literacy, abate agricultural indebtedness, encourage local industries, improve sanitation, combat epidemics. They are not succeeding as they should, because they cannot command sufficient co-operation from the permanent services, on account of the weaknesses in the Congress ranks: and more than all else, because of the lack of proper explanation of the word *Swa-raj*, "Self-Government," to the public.

Neither Mahatma Gandhi, nor Shri Jawaharlal Nehru, nor Shri Subhas Chandra Bose, nor any other member of the High Command, nor any other recognized and followed "leader" of the Congress (except C. R. Das for a while), has ever tried to explain to the public what the word "Swa-raj" means. Up to 1936 or 1937 Mahatma Gandhi used to say in effect, when occasion arose, that to him *Swa-raj* meant Dominion Status. In the latest interview, above quoted, he said: "I cannot exactly tell where I myself stand on that." In any case "Dominion Status" means an imitation of the British form of Government, which, styled democratic, is at bottom oligarchic; and Mahatma Gandhi has not expressed his mind about the form of social structure needed by India—something much more important than the mere form of Government. On one occasion in Poona, early in 1934, if I remember rightly, he expressly declined to consider the subject of social structure, as being a "tall order." Mahatma Gandhi has, indeed, repeatedly and frankly said such things as: "I have no prevision," "I see darkness around me," "I no longer have that confidence in myself which I formerly had," "If I had a scheme of *Swa-raj* I would make haste to share it with the public," "The future Constituent Assembly, elected by the people, must decide." As well have let the future Constituent Assembly decide whether India should have *Swa-raj* or not! Mahatma Gandhi's full pronouncement on the subject is contained in his book,

Hind Swaraj. It all amounts to this, that all that is characteristic of or peculiar to modern civilization, machinery, railways, steamships, aeroplanes, electric lights, motor-cars, post, telegraphs, printing presses, watches and clocks, hospitals, educational methods and institutions, medical systems, etc., are bad; should be given up, wholly; not simply reformed, corrected, regulated; also, apparently, by legitimate inference, much of the ancient Indian civilization too, the great temples, the beautiful carved-stone ghats and palaces, the fine arts, shawls and kam-khabs, articles of *vertu*, and varied learning and literature, all that makes the "splendour" of life, should go; and primitive agricultural life should be restored, as that is all that God and Nature intended for mankind. But "civilization" and its arts and sciences are also the products of Nature.

The misfortune is that, as Mahatma Gandhi has, with his all-disarming sincerity, often frankly confessed, he "can only show the way to the Truth, and not the Truth itself"; and he has not seen the whole Truth himself—which whole Truth the ancient Rishis of India do show, as well as the way to it. He has not seen the great Truth of their system of individuo-socialism. The element of Truth in Mahatma Gandhi's *Hind Swaraj* is a vague sensing of the fact which is expounded in the *Upanishads*, *Gita*, *Manusmriti*; the fact that all *separate individuality itself*, all this life-process, is founded upon, has its source in, the "error," the original sin, of *avidya*, the identification of the Infinite Spirit with the finite body of flesh and blood and bone; whence "egoism, selfishness, like and dislike, love and hate," and also the possibility and fact of "altruism, self-denial, philanthropy." All human sorrow finally you must give up, all joy also, and merge back into the total Unconscious, i.e. the Supreme Principle of Consciousness. Mere reversion to agricultural life will not suffice. You have to revert much further back. And nations, as well

as individuals, have to revert thus; but in the proper time; after having "tasted and tested all things, and held fast by the (relatively) good"; after having equitably discharged their duties to the egoistic as well as altruistic instincts. Mahatma Gandhi has often equated Swa-raj with Ram-raj, again without precise definition. But Ram-raj, if Valmiki is to be believed, was very far from being wholly agricultural. It was largely agricultural; but it was not all villages only; it was highly urban also. Valmiki's description of Rama's Ayodhya is almost as gorgeous, though quieter, as that of Ravana's Golden Lanka, which was predominantly "mechanical."

In the present condition of India, with her internal dissensions, the eyes of many of the educated younger generation are fixed on Russia and her Bolshevism or Socialism or Communism, though they are frightened also by its periodical bloody "purges." On the other hand, the eyes of the older generation in (as well as out of) the Congress, despite deprecations of slave-mentality, are fixed on the Democratism, or whatever it be, of Britain or its Colonies, and of the U.S.A.; perhaps of France also. No one in India seems overtly to be in favour of the "ideology" of Nazism-Fascism. Yet, it seems, to some of us at least, that if only all these "isms" would shed their "extremisms," and take in, instead, a little genuine Spiritual Religion and a few psychological principles, they would be at once shaking hands with each other, or even running into each other's arms. All these "ideologies" and "isms" have great things to their credit; all have great crimes to their debit, too. It is only lop-sided extremisms that are making them glare at each other, spend all their respective peoples' vitality on "organizing for war" instead of "organizing for peace."

This dire jeopardy of Western Civilization, when its great sins against the weaker peoples are "coming home

to roost" and its fate is hanging by a thread, this should abate, if not dispel, our "Democratist" as well as "Socialist" leaders' fond faiths in the various "ideologies" of the West, which many of the most eminent scientists and thinkers of that West itself are condemning strongly; and should induce them to give serious attention and consideration to the principles of the ancient time-tested Social Structure. Some ask: If those principles were so good, why has India fallen? The answer is: Because the character of the custodians degenerated, the "spirit" changed, the "head" went wrong, the good principles were *not followed* any longer, were *neglected*, nay, were *replaced by evil ones*. The custodians of the "Law" in India lost, indeed, both self-denial and wisdom. Without a strong central core, a dauntless heart-and-brain, consisting of a band of *philanthropic, self-denying and wise* persons, no nation, no people, no civilization, can flourish. A nation, a people, which cannot evolve and maintain such a "heart-and brain," must die prematurely of degeneration, or by violent "accident," destruction by war, or become enslaved and live by sufferance. This last fate has befallen India. But it has much vitality yet left, and the strong possibility of a new lease of life, provided the needed *vidyā* can be added to Mahatma Gandhi's *tapas*.

Mahatma Gandhi, our greatest *moral* force, our greatest *tapas*-force to-day, has only to add to that the *intellectual* force of what the ancient *vidyā* teaches on the subject of *Social Organization*. He will then succeed in saving India, and will make her a shining example for the West to copy, instead of a reflection, and a pale and distorted reflection too, of that West's own features.

The work will be done if Mahatma Gandhi and the leaders of the Congress first make their own minds clear on the subject, and arrive at definite ideas as to the Social Structure that will best suit the Indian People; and will

BHAGAVAN DAS

then organize a strong band of (Hindu and Muslim and Christian) volunteers, possessing the necessary spirit of self-denial, capacity for travel and hard work, and the gift of speech, and adequate *intellectual equipment*, or readiness to newly acquire it if not already possessed—volunteers who will dedicate themselves, for a while, to the work of carrying, jointly, to every corner of India (1) the good news of the traditional Scheme of Scientific Socialism, the Scheme of Organization devised by the ancient patriarchs, not only for the Indian People, but for the whole Human Race, without distinction of caste, creed, colour, race, or sex, and (2) the further Message of all the Great Re-proclaimers of the one Universal Religion, that *all Religions are One and the same in Essentials*. The Congress Committees which exist in practically every town and district, and now in a number of States also, could easily provide all needed facilities for the work of such dedicates. They would educate public opinion, tell the people that “freedom” means freedom to exercise rights and, even more, to discharge duties, as laid down in the Scheme of Social Organization for the different vocations.

GANDHI'S STATEMANSHIP

by ALBERT EINSTEIN, D.Sc.

(The Institute of Advanced Studies, School of Mathematics, Princeton University, U.S.A.)

Gandhi is unique in political history. He has invented an entirely new and humane technique for the liberation struggle of an oppressed people and carried it out with the greatest energy and devotion. The moral influence which

ALBERT EINSTEIN

he has exercised upon thinking people through the civilized world may be far more durable than would appear likely in our present age, with its exaggeration of brute force. For the work of statesmen is permanent only in so far as they arouse and consolidate the moral forces of their peoples through their personal example and educating influence.

We are fortunate and should be grateful that fate has bestowed upon us so luminous a contemporary—a beacon to the generations to come.

GANDHIJI AS A SOCIAL SCIENTIST
AND SOCIAL INVENTOR

by RICHARD B. GREGG
(South Natick, Mass., U.S.A.)

Because of his widely misunderstood attitude toward machinery, Gandhiji is regarded in the West as almost the antithesis of a scientist, but that is a mistake.

He is a social scientist because he follows social truth by the scientific method of observation, intuition and intellectual hypothesis, and experimental test. He once told me that he considered Western scientists not very thorough because not many of them were willing to test their hypotheses on themselves. He, however, always makes the first test of an hypothesis on himself, before he asks anyone else to try. That is so, whether the hypothesis relates to a matter of diet, sanitation, spinning-wheel, caste reform, or Satyāgraha. The title he chose for his autobiography was *My Experiments with Truth*.

He is not a mere scientist: he is a great scientist, in the

RICHARD B. GREGG

realm of social truth. He is great because of his choice of problems, because of his methods of solution, because of the persistence and thoroughness of his search, and because of the profundity of his knowledge of the human heart. His greatness as a social inventor is shown by the close adaptation of his methods to the culture and modes of thought and feeling of the people and to their economic and technological resources. This greatness is also shown, I think, by his discrimination in choosing what to try to discard and what to try to conserve. Again, it is shown by the rate at which he applies and pushes reforms. He knows that in any society there is an organic rate of change peculiar to it at that stage. He knows that while certain processes long in gestation may come suddenly to birth, other changes will require at least three generations to bring about the complete change, to slough off old inherited habits and attitudes and master the new with its major implications. Another mark of his greatness in social invention is that whenever he proposes a social reform he creates an effective organization to accomplish it. He is a master of all the details of both organization and administration. The results of his work in numerous fields have already proven him surpassingly great, and history will, I believe, prove his greatness in places where his work has just begun.

The widespread and difficult social problems on which he has especially worked are: (1) poverty, (2) unemployment, (3) violence—between individuals, groups, and nations, (4) disunity and friction between social groups, (5) education, (6) to a lesser extent, sanitation and public health, nutrition, and agricultural reforms. That these are great problems all will admit. Let me discuss them in reverse order.

In the field of sanitation and public health Gandhiji realizes that many of the problems cannot be solved until

RICHARD B. GREGG

the poverty of the people can be mitigated. Yet he has tried out and put into practice in his ashrams many simple measures of sanitation which are within the means of the peasants who form the bulk of the population. He has trained many workers in these measures and they are gradually being put into effect in numerous places.

Gandhiji has made great strides in persuading separated social groups to harmonize their differences, especially in the instance of Harijan reform. I know of no country where there has been so great a voluntary and therefore real (inner as well as outer) movement of social unity as in this instance. The problem of Hindu-Muslim friction is largely due to outside political factors which neither Gandhi nor any Indian can control. Yet it will be solved when India wins her freedom, and Gandhiji's method will count largely in the solution.

In the realm of popular education Gandhiji has recently initiated a scheme in which all education will come to the pupils through some handicraft—all desirable knowledge being related to or implied in the processes and relationships of that particular handicraft. In the economic stresses probably lying ahead for all of us, this scheme has high promise. Not only will it enable students to earn their tuition as they go, and thus make education available to the masses with a minimum of State aid, but it will also prune off much useless frippery and make education relevant to life. Furthermore, it is wholly consistent with the close dependence of mind upon hand and eye throughout the evolution of the human species.

The problem of violence and Gandhiji's method of solution I have considered in my book, *The Power of Non-violence*, and I will not attempt to discuss it further here. While his method has not yet won freedom for India, it has made great advances and altered the political and social attitudes of practically the entire population. Most of

RICHARD B. GREGG

them have lost their former inferiority complex and have instead hope, self-confidence, political energy and demonstrated power of a new sort. I am confident that Gandhiji's method will win Indian freedom. Not only that, but it will alter the entire world.

Gandhiji's solution for the problems of poverty and unemployment is the revival of hand-carding, hand-spinning and hand-weaving of textiles and the re-development of other handicrafts. The validity of this proposal is so widely and deeply decried in the West, and in India, too, by Indians educated in Western and urban modes, that I would like to discuss in terms of Western concepts some reasons for its soundness.

It is realized well in India, but hardly at all elsewhere, that because of the Indian climate, with its concentrated short rainy season and its long period of heat and dryness, there are periods ranging from three to six months all over India when the peasants are completely idle. During the worst of the heat they cannot cultivate the hard soil, nor can they sow or reap. As there are approximately 120,000,000 actual workers in field and forest in continental India, the extent of this seasonal rural unemployment every year is tremendous, both absolutely and relatively to the total population of the country. The economic losses are excessive. The psychological and moral depression and deterioration caused by it is appalling. Before the advent of mill-made cloth from the West, the peasants used this idle time to spin and weave their own clothes and to work at other supplementary handicrafts. Even to-day about one-third of the cloth used in India is woven on hand-looms. Cotton grows in practically every province in India. The cost of hand-tools for this work is within the low financial means of the peasants. The traditions of handcraft are not yet lost. The market cost of hand-made cloth is not much above that of mill cloth,

RICHARD B. GREGG

and for those who spin their own yarn it is less. In most parts of the population clothing cost amounts to from one-fifth to one-sixth of the total cost of living. For people close to the margin of subsistence a saving of one-tenth of the total cost of living, as is attainable without strain this way, would be vital. Such handwork is not only economically valuable; it is subtly but powerfully restorative of hope, initiative, self-respect, and self-reliance which are all so badly damaged by prolonged unemployment and poverty. This curative power of handcraft is well recognized by modern psychiatrists, and handcraft, under the name of "occupational therapy," is widely used for the cure of mental disease, especially depressive insanities. For these reasons the proposal to revive this industry as a remedy for Indian unemployment is not so absurd as would at first seem.

But, even so, many laugh the idea to scorn and say it is going backward, an anachronism, an attempt to turn back the clock, an abandonment of the immensely fruitful principle of the division of labour, a discarding of machinery and science.

A technological system exists presumably for the benefit of the entire mass of people who live under it. If the given technology does not benefit a considerable minority, it is not folly for that minority to adopt any other mode of technology which will really improve their economic condition. When for millions of people a given technology no longer provides their material needs, it is for them a blind alley, and it is silly of them not to retrace their steps until they can find a real way out—a way subject to their own control. For them the economic clock has stopped. To adopt any technology which will actually provide, at whatever rate of speed, one of their chief material needs is not putting the clock back, but starting it again. Modern war will turn the clock back more effectually than the

RICHARD B. GREGG

adoption of hand-machines, yet the statesmen are devoting vaster and vaster sums to war, with the approval of most engineers and other "educated" people.

Modern industrialism has reduced the social function of work to a rather more primitive stage than it was when handicraft prevailed. Our actual practice of moral unity has not got much beyond, if at all, what it was at the handicraft stage. The only "going back" was when our grandfathers and we were so unintelligent as not to realize and act on the conviction that human society is a unit, and to choose methods and tools and media of exchange which would express that unity in detailed daily transactions and work.

Adopting handicrafts would not be an abandonment of the principle of division of labour. In some respects that principle has been outmoded by automatic and semi-automatic machinery. In other respects the previous intense application of the principle can no longer operate effectively because of a change in two necessary factors—a shrinkage of previously large markets and a weakening in the complementary co-operation, interdependence and harmony between labour, management and capital. Division of labour has its limits of advantage and those limits have recently shrunk.

Gandhiji's proposal does not discard machinery or science. It brings simple machinery to a now unused reservoir of man-power—the unemployed. It chooses particular machines because they are adapted to the economic and social circumstances of the mass of people and also because the use of that particular type of machinery will not create too difficult additional social and economic problems at a time when difficulties are already very great.

In all countries there is now a steady increase in the amount and proportion of State funds devoted to military equipment and activities, and thereby a steady lowering

RICHARD B. GREGG

of the common standard of life and reduction of public services like education, public health, and so on. The economic system is in a period of decline. In the West, anyhow, there is a steady social deterioration and disorganization, marked by increases in the rates of insanity, suicide and crime. If another world war comes, mankind will need occupational therapy on a large scale. Khaddar and handcrafts of all kinds will become still more valuable to people everywhere—valuable both economically and therapeutically.

Then, too, we must not overlook the fact that all industrialized countries are on the brink of rapid and great decreases in population. The evidence has been detailed by such authorities as Carr-Saunders, Kuczynski, T. H. Marshall, Enid Charles, H. D. Henderson, Arnold Plant, and Hogben. The vast economic and social effects of this drop in population, especially in the West, will be tremendously difficult and will be felt all over the world. For this reason again, handicraft activity, especially khaddar, will become extremely helpful.

These considerations, among others, convince me that Gandhiji is a great social scientist and social inventor. His achievements remind me of the old Sanskrit saying: "Magic powers do not come to a man because he does things that are hard, but because he does things with a pure heart." That is, miracles can be accomplished by lofty, single purpose and utter devotion. Thank God for Gandhiji!

GERALD HEARD

THE HOUR AND THE MAN

*by GERALD HEARD
(Hollywood, U.S.A.)*

When the Western world began to imagine that to be rich was to be civilized, it assumed that as its mechanic skill would inevitably increase, its welfare would also be equally increased, its prosperity would become permanent, all men would be equal because equally supplied with indefinite goods, and progress would be infinite.

Now that this brief Occidental myth is vanishing, it is possible to say that all men are not equal—there are great men and small, by natural spiritual endowment—and also that civilization does not progress inevitably but is capable both of collapse and also of sudden new mutations under the inspiration of a single creative mind.

This discovery has come not a moment too soon. For as the Western world imagined that it was preparing for itself a future of infinite comfort, ease and plenty, it was, in point of fact, not only failing to solve its fundamental problem but steadily and rapidly aggravating this issue. That problem and issue is the search for a real sanction of law and order, and how, if violence is the only method of preserving peace and justice, peace and justice are not to be destroyed by their preserver. This question had been confronted by all great reformers. Jesus had declined the sword, but his followers had taken it up as soon as they were given civil authority. Mohammed also began by preaching a faith to be spread by persuasion, but subsided into persecution as the quickest propaganda. Yet warfare is not efficient, let alone the question whether it can ever be righteous. With every mechanic invention, arms have become increasingly instruments of imprecision. It is not merely that "He, who's convinced against his will, is of

GERALD HEARD

the same opinion still." War hits inaccurately and blindly, so injuring many who were at first completely outside the original dispute and bringing them in against the aggressor. War is not an "instrument of policy": it is a disease of society.

Hence many original minds, wishing to advance their purposes, have sought, at first hardly knowing what they were at, and then with increasing realization, to create an instrument and to train a "Force" which would be apt, appropriate, precise, effective. One such outstanding effort was the Society of Jesus of Ignatius Loyola. Here were selected men, trained not only in the intelligence but also in the deep will by careful if rudimentary psychological exercises; organized on military lines as far as discipline and obedience to superiors are concerned; denied all distractions of home, wife, children, property or rank; and so trained, equipped and mobilized, sent out under the orders of a General to recapture for the Roman Church what it had lost in the first flood of the Reformation.

The next stage in the development of a new unarmed Force came, not with an order attempting to re-establish a religion, but from specific achievements in solving particular problems which, till then, had successfully resisted the accepted method of making them yield to violence. With the rise of the new psychiatry for treatment of lunacy a local but very definite and unexpected victory for Non-violence was achieved, a victory which meant, with the triumph of the "open-door method," a power to cure lunacy and to reduce the incidence of madness, a power which the old, mistaken, conventional method of violence had never had. The extension of this method of trained, reassuring initiative, spread to the contacting of backward peoples (the anthropological approach), the educational training of wild animals, and the re-socialization of the criminal.

GERALD HEARD

Yet all these remarkable results in dealing with particular classes of men and animals unamenable to violence—results which in single cases had already been frequently demonstrated even in the West by such consistent religious individuals as the Quakers—were isolated discoveries, so isolated that the practitioners of these methods did not even themselves realize the relevance of their particular discovery, technique and success to the general problem of war and peace, general social order and international relationships.

Meanwhile warfare itself had been developed until it had reached a pitch of potential destructiveness never before thought possible, and, as often happens with mankind, as the thing increased both in horror and in ineffectiveness, as men had failed to rid themselves of such a madness, they attempted to make what had once been a means into an end; and what had been defended as an unavoidable necessary effectiveness, they now advocated as a ghastly idolatry, as a supreme good in itself.

To meet such a convergence of two madnesses—the blind submission of free men to the powers of murderous machines and then to the dictates of a group-folly as blind as and even more destructive than the murder machines themselves, there was needed a man as ingenious as the inventors of the diabolic instruments of destruction and as dynamic as the daimonic leaders who were stampeding their peoples into mutual massacre.

There can be little doubt that this man will be recognized by historians as M. K. Gandhi. At the time when Europe, Asia and Africa were being drawn as never before into a tri-partite, bewildered, chaotic contact, India gave this man to Africa that there he might make his first great demonstration against (or perhaps it would be truer to say with) Europe. For his technique of Non-violence was and is by its nature one to educate its opponents, as much

GERALD HEARD

as to succour those whose cause it advocates. Springing from India, it was nevertheless right that its first demonstration should be in Africa, for this method belongs to mankind and indeed is the one valid approach and link between not merely all the races of mankind but between man and all sentient beings. India, which had sent out this man, then, in turn, became the centre of his next great campaign in which he strove, through the long life which now reaches its crown, to teach that great country, which is in its situation and in its contents an epitome of all mankind's peoples and problems, how it might win its freedom by training itself in a practical way to implement the teaching which had been the core of all the instruction of all the sages of India.

What the future may hold we cannot see, but it does not seem to be hazardous either in time or space to foretell that in this coming generation and in India itself will be worked out the final contest between the forces of destruction, urging their case by telling the timid and the rich that they alone can give these people security, and the forces of construction whereby a trained, disciplined, informed new order of the Saviours of Mankind will take the field and strive to give mankind the only victory which will not mean ruin, not merely of man's goods but of his very race. We cannot tell how that issue will turn. It is not in us to command success, but we can say that whether it succeed or fail it is the one path for those who care for their fellows; and that that path is open to-day is due, more than to anyone, to the man who to-day stands at the summit of his life and service to mankind.

CARL HEATH

M. K. GANDHI: APOSTLE OF LIGHT AND
TRUTH-FORCE

by CARL HEATH

(Chairman, India Conciliation Group,
London)

In the history of humanity the apostolic man must always face a tremendous struggle. "I am come like light into the world," said one. But the children of light are never welcome, for men love darkness rather than light. The clouds of ignorance, prejudice, and indifference are even felt as protective. The apostolic man must break through and overcome.

All his life, this breaking through darkness and this overcoming of ignorance and prejudice have been the mark of M. K. Gandhi's character. That is why to-day, when he shines, not alone as the foremost spirit of India, but as an inspiration to all generous humankind, he has behind him a long record of suffering and struggle, of strenuous prayer and many fasts. He could not be great were it otherwise.

Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi long ago learnt the secret of patience. Indeed he has discovered the truth of the saying of Thomas à Kempis: "Thy peace shall be in *much* patience." They who study his life and watch him closely in his public actions and relationships cannot but be impressed by the fact that whilst the excitement of other men may dangerously increase his blood-pressure, it does not affect his characteristic patience—patience with opponents, patience with an alien Government, patience with his endless visitors, and patience with his own at times disturbing disciples. Perhaps this patience is his because, in spite of much furious wrong and exasperating happenings, he is so deeply aware in his own soul that "the mills of God grind slowly." M. K. Gandhi works in those mills.

And then with no pretensions to infallibility and though making mistakes for which he has from time to time with a rare courage done public penance, he is the devotee of truth. "Nowadays," he wrote three years ago, "nothing so completely describes my God as Truth." This, be it noted, has led him not to a world of speculative verities, but to a devotion in service. "To be true to such religion one has to lose oneself in continuous and continuing service of all life." This is not, however, the service of benevolence from above. It is "a complete merging of oneself in, and identification with this limitless ocean of life." It "must be taken to include every department of life." So he makes truth a concrete realism.

And hence in M. K. Gandhi is to be found an integration of life. He is never standing apart, the spiritual superior-aloof. If he is a Mahatma or Great Soul, he is also a man of the people amongst the people. Clear sighted, keeping much silence before God, humble-minded in the essential sense, the spiritual man of prayer and vision; he is also the man of much physical work, very approachable, lovable and humorous—and right in the thick of the human struggle, moral and religious, social and political.

Subtle as he sometimes is, he is to be loved for his simplicity and clarity of soul—for he has gone through much cleansing of the spirit; also for the material simplicity of his existence that attracts men and women of all nations and multitudes of his own. For he has divested himself of possessions and knows, like Thoreau, the joy of possessing all and owning nothing. And, in this condition, of serving all life for a great interior end, becoming for millions of striving men and women a sustaining centre—*Gandhiji!*

Consider his struggle for his fellow-nationals in South Africa, for the untouchables of his own Hindu community—his harijans; for the peoples of India and their

CARL HEATH

freedom; for the village life of the plains with its bitter economic want and its deep need for education; for the tribesmen of the mountain frontiers; for Moslem-Hindu unity; for the prisoners; for men and women of all classes, creeds, castes and races; for the sub-humans expressed in "cow protection"; and for the great creative idea of non-violent resistance to evil, itself a veritable word of life and direction for those who struggle with the war spirit all round the world. And in all this his ever persistent rejection of the spirit of ill-will toward any, justifying his proud claim to be "*a humble servant of India and humanity.*"

That M. K. Gandhi should hold with such strength to the doctrine of *satyāgraha* is fitting, for he is himself an incarnation of soul-force. Above all his political and social activity he remains always the man of the soul. And as such he speaks to the modern world as a challenging man. That is his greatest virtue and prophetic value. Thwarted and imprisoned, derided and scorned, he has but stepped higher and higher in the scale of human life.

His humanity to men and to all living things has given him multitudes of friends in every place and nation under the sun. There is in his mind no distinction in his attitude to Hindu or Moslem, Christian, Buddhist, Parsee, or Jew, or men of any other faith. All are his friends and parts of the family of Truth, and Truth is God. In all relations with humans, as with sub-humans, *ahimsā* rules his life. For this age he is the *type* of the civilized and humanized man.

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

**THE SIGNIFICANCE OF GANDHI FOR THE
OUTLOOK OF A CHRISTIAN PACIFIST**

*by STEPHEN HOBHOUSE, M.A.
(Broxbourne, Herts, England)*

However objective our religion or philosophy may appear to be, each of us human beings who is able to reflect and to aspire has had to construct a world of his own out of materials set before him by the mysterious, unknown environment wherein he finds himself. Within this universe of our consciousness there are certain objects—forces, qualities, ideals, or persons we call them—which stir with a strange and moving attraction the central fibres of our nature, our heart and our reason; and there comes to us in our better moments a constant longing to know them, to love them, to identify ourselves with them more and more completely, ever seeking to liberate ourselves from the trivial and inessential, the unlovely and the impure.

Other minds may find much of this central attraction in the creations of human art or even in the subtle correspondences of scientific process. I am one of the many who find it chiefly in the inexpressible wonder and beauty of personality, as imagined in its perfection of life through the best and loveliest men and women who cross our path whether in the flesh or in books, as well as in an indefinable sense of the same personal wonder and beauty breathed upon us from visible nature, in sky and earth and living things, when her moods and ours possess the inner harmony that brings peace. And from these two centres of my highest experience I am inescapably drawn to a faith in that which we call God, to an experiment in discovering and testing an infinite super-personal yet supremely personal and supremely beneficent Being, who is at once the

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

source and the goal of all the separate centres of life and beauty which within and around me strive for liberation and expression.

Unhappily, too, I am equally conscious of dark, destructive elements of ugliness and discord, which with an evil activity of their own mar the growth of harmonious life. These forces seem to some extent to be present in external nature, but, inasmuch as the courageous human soul has a marvellous capacity for overcoming or neutralizing the hostility of nature, they are far more dangerous enemies as present within the hearts of men, and within my own heart in particular. Unaided I too often lose faith and am all but helpless before the demonic power of these evil tendencies; and I must turn for aid and liberation to a closer fellowship of spirit with some other personality, human or divine.

Providence has ordained that I have been born and bred in a community where past and present have united in confronting me with the historic figure of Jesus Christ, as supremely incarnating the infinite Personality which seems to live at the heart of all that is good and beautiful. Thought and prayer and the influences of a still vigorous tradition, sanctified by the wisdom of antiquity and now, as perhaps never before, becoming purified of alien accretions, have convinced me that this historic person holds a position at the heart of the Godhead and the universe, as no other human figure, no other *avatar* or incarnation of the Divine can do. The same Spirit lives with a lesser but still splendid pre-eminence in other human personalities, in many doubtless who have left behind them no recorded memory, in some souls whose memory is preserved as the bright and shining lights of our race's history. A few dark patches indeed there may be on their radiance, but these dim its beneficence but little. I think of them all as messengers and prophets of the eternal Christ, even though

some among them would not or could not acknowledge Him as Lord and God.

Of these historic light-bearers, one of the greatest of all time, so it seems to me, is Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi, the prophet of *ahimsā-satyāgraha*. Certainly he is the greatest that has appeared in our own day. The decay of ancient faiths and moralities, the tyranny of the machine, the evil use of applied science made by the misguided industrialists and militarists whose control we support or at least endure, have, in spite of recent revelation of many new and lovely aspects of truth, produced in world history an unexampled crisis. It is even conceivable that civilization or, since that word is an ambiguous one, orderly, kindly, enlightened human society, as the more fortunate know it to-day, may perish more completely than ever before in the universal confusion and destruction of strife engendered by the lawless self-seeking of human desires and passions.

I have set myself in this essay to try to explain how it is that Gandhi's great and closely related ideals of *ahimsā* and *satyāgraha* appear to me to present the only means by which salvation and redemption, healing and true life, can come to the sorely distracted and diseased environment in which we find ourselves. And in doing so I have at the same time to look back upon the records of these ideals in the past history of European thought, as they have lived on for the most part out of sight and in byways despised or neglected by the leaders of Christian culture. (Concerning the history of *ahimsā* in India and China I am not qualified to write.)

On a noisy motor-road leading into the ancient, but now industrialized town of Görlitz in German Silesia, in the centre of a Europe that is with feverish haste forging innumerable implements far more devilish than swords for its own mutilation and destruction, there was placed only

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

some fifteen years ago a statue in honour of the great but little known Christian, Jakob Boehme, on the base of which have been inscribed his own words of faith and warning, *Liebe und Demut unser Schwert*—"Love and Humility is our Sword"; "with which we can fight under Christ's crown of thorns" would have completed the quotation, as the old mystic wrote it. And Boehme was a mystic who was valiant for the Truth of God; he was indeed expelled from his home for proclaiming it as salvation for the individual soul. Through the centuries of European history there have certainly been many other humble, loving, fearless men and women who have lived in the spirit of that message, the message of *ahimsā*, and who have seen its utter incompatibility with a large part of the social and national activities of their country. But very few indeed have had the strength and courage and inspiration to proclaim the gospel of universal love as a divine call to their fellow-countrymen for the reconstruction of society and the salvation of the present world-order. Hitherto the tradition of an exaggerated other-worldliness has nearly always led such enlightened spirits to acquiesce in a belief in the predestined destruction of world and world-order, as both alike unredeemable.

Now at last, when a Europe, still in part calling itself Christian, in company with all "civilized" nations elsewhere, is straining every nerve towards a suicidal conflict, there has arisen, in the midst of an India herself painfully distracted by deep-rooted racial and religious dissensions, a little, frail Hindu ex-lawyer able to inspire thousands of men and women to enlist, in the name of truth and justice, in quite another kind of warfare. A warfare it is whose soldiers try to keep entirely free from the defiling contact of the machinery of destruction, a warfare waged with the innocent weapons of soul-force and "harmlessness," of goodwill shown even to cruel foes, of trustful

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

humility before God—yes, a warfare, I would say, waged with a willing acceptance of Christ's crown of thorns and of his cross of pain, in strong faith that it is a cross and a crown which will redeem and raise up to God both victim and violator alike.—Indians must pardon me if I slip naturally into the language of Christian devotion, while I pay a willing tribute to the Hinduism which has nursed the prophet of *ahimsā*.

Amid the fear and gloom of the modern world this seems a dream too beautiful to be true; and yet, in spite so far of failures and inconsistencies and lapses (on the part of the leader, as well as of his followers), there have been made, if we may believe the reports of credible witnesses, the first experiments at least in such a life-giving mass-movement. Within the last few months the Mahatma himself (to give him the usual Indian title of reverence, which he himself disclaims) has once again made a frank admission of past failure and disappointment, but has nevertheless expressed his unshaken confidence for the future. "God has chosen me," he writes, "as His instrument for presenting non-violence to India for dealing with her many ills . . . my faith in non-violence remains as strong as ever. I am quite sure that not only should it answer all our requirements in our own country, but that it should, if properly applied, prevent the bloodshed that is going on outside India and is threatening to overthrow the Western world."¹

What are we to think of a popular and intensely patriotic movement among people who are subject to the rule of alien invaders, wherein thousands, it appears, have joyously and confidently accepted as their working gospel such

¹ M. K. Gandhi in his weekly paper *Haribhau* for July 7, 1938, confirmed by other similar statements in later issues of the same most instructive periodical.

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

assertions as the following, taken from the lips or the pen of their great leader?¹

"*Ahimsā* ['harmlessness' or non-violence] means the largest love. It is the supreme law. By it alone can mankind be saved."

"He who believes in non-violence believes in a living God."

"Non-violence cannot be taught by word of mouth. It is kindled in our heart by the grace of God, in answer to earnest prayer."

"Non-violence is the weapon of the strongest and the bravest. The true man of God has the strength to use the sword, but will not use it, knowing that every man is the image of God."

"If blood be shed, let it be our blood. Cultivate the quiet courage of dying without killing."

"Love does not burn others, it burns itself, suffering joyfully even unto death. It will do no intentional injury, in thought, word, or deed, to the person of a single Englishman."

"India must conquer her so-called conquerors by love. For us patriotism is the same as the love of humanity. I will not hurt England or Germany to serve India."

"Non-violence and Truth [*Satya*] are inseparable and pre-suppose one another."

"There is no God higher than Truth. Truth is the first thing to be sought for."

"In our holy war, which is directed by God Himself, there are no secrets to be guarded, there is no scope for cunning, no place for untruth. All is done openly in the face of the enemy."

¹ In some cases I have condensed or united distinct precepts of Gandhi, as reported by different writers or by himself.

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

"*Satyāgraha* [truth-force or soul-force] requires the control, by the prayer for purity, of all bodily and self-regarding desires."

"In every step that he takes the *Satyāgrahi* [he who practises truth-force] is bound to consider the needs of his adversary. He is ever gentle and courteous to him, though he will not obey unrighteous laws or commands."

"The *Satyāgrahi* will not swerve from the path of justice, but he is always eager for peace. He has abundant faith in others, infinite patience, and ample hope."

"Human nature is in its essence one, and therefore the aggressor unfailingly responds [*that is*, in the end] to the advances of love."

"No power on earth can stand before the march of a peaceful, determined, and God-fearing people. Non-violence is more powerful than all the armaments in the world."

"To the God-fearing death has no terrors."

"Bravery on the battlefield is impossible for us. But fearlessness is absolutely necessary, the abandonment of all fear of bodily injury, of disease or death, of the loss of possessions, of family, or of reputation. Nothing in this world is ours."

"*Ahimsā* requires true humility, for it is reliance not on self, but on God alone."

Certainly, in so far as we cling without misgivings to an unjust share of the world's wealth, or in so far as we find satisfaction in exploiting or dominating our fellow-creatures, we may well fear any general adherence to such principles of action as these. But all men and women of goodwill, who try to live by faith in man and in God and in the reality of the spiritual universe, ought surely to

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

rejoice in a movement, which, with whatever faults and lapses, has for the first time in human history inscribed such purely life-giving watchwords upon its banners.

It should be noticed particularly that on at least two occasions where *Satyāgraha* campaigns in the form of civil disobedience had generated among an unsufficiently prepared population an atmosphere of dangerous excitement, so that deeds of violence began to be committed, the Indian leader was able, by an act of exceptional courage and after confessing his "Himalayan blunder," to call off the campaign altogether, much to the displeasure and even anger of many of his supporters. Moreover, integrally united with Gandhi's programme for resisting the evil of violence and oppression, go various activities which express the *satyāgrahi*'s passionate desire for identification with "the poorest, the lowliest, and the lost," especially those, like the "untouchables" in India, who are to be found at our own doors.

During the last few centuries the standards and institutions of Western society have encircled most of the globe, and in that society the lovely ideals of Jesus have at best been only very partially applied. It is true that they have been a vitalizing influence, supplying a real degree of justice, mercy, and succour to the weak and unfortunate and oppressed, upholding truth and honesty, and raising the great majority above the bogs of a sensual materialism. But even in these fields their success has been severely limited, while Christian ideals have quite failed, as we know, to abolish the miseries of unemployment, of industrial competition, and of war. This failure is mainly due to the fact that almost all Christians, even the most devout, have loved "security" too much, have placed their trust in outward, unspiritual things, in accumulated wealth and in death-dealing weapons as the defences of their

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

peace rather than in God and their own God-given soul-force. We try to serve God and Mammon, we surround ourselves with a multiplicity of goods made too often by ignorant and unwilling labour and by soul-destroying machinery, we persuade our young men to be trained to kill and wound and destroy, as our protection against the evil and the needy, and by our greed or selfishness we have often converted the needy into the evil.

Jesus in his great sermon and still more by the example of his own life and death has shown once for all the cure for this false civilization. He calls men and women to learn how to be content with wholesome poverty and simplicity of life (though not with the demoralizing poverty of destitution), to have implicit trust in the care and goodness of God, to value above all else God and spiritual joys and the winning of the life eternal; he calls them to realize their oneness with all men, and to meet the evil will with invincible patience and love, with belief in the convertibility of the unjust and a willingness to suffer and to die rather than violently resist, this being God's way of changing evil men into good.

Unfortunately, from the very first, few of the followers of Jesus seem to have fully understood this way of meeting evil. Even in the New Testament its enunciation has in places become overlaid by the old punitive ideas. Some at least of the writers in that sacred volume assumed it to be the rightful function of God and of the State, that is, of the pagan State, to use the sword of wrath and punishment, though the individual Christian must not answer evil with evil. The Churches not unnaturally adopted this view, and transferred it with disastrous effect to the Christian State. In particular the rooted idea, that Jesus, the Son of God, had taught the doctrine of an everlasting hell, has lain as a blight on Christian thought. With such

a belief it became very difficult to penetrate to the full meaning of the Cross.

Even the greatest devotion to the person of Jesus as perfect humanity (a devotion legitimate if He is, as I believe, in some unique sense God), even the mystical adoration of and self-identification with a God, who is Love, has failed to reveal to the saints of Christendom the Divine will for human society. Doubtless many of them have practised what was in fact true *ahimsā*. But no great leader of the Church has proclaimed it as the only salvation for mankind. Again, at least until quite modern times, even those "heretics," who enlightened by the Spirit came to see that Christians ought to take no part in social violence (e.g. among the Waldenses, the "Spiritual" Franciscans, Anabaptists or Quakers), have still, it would seem, usually believed in God as one who can and does feel the emotion of wrath and the desire to punish, as one who expressly willed and directed the national wars and cruelties of the Old Testament, as one who has ordained a merciless and never-ending retribution of sin unrepented during the brief lifetime of the sinners. Isolated thinkers and mystics, such as Peter Chelchizki (the fifteenth-century Czech forerunner of Tolstoy), some perhaps of the Anabaptist and Quaker saints, Jakob Boehme (in large measure) and his more consistent English disciple, William Law, have therefore been as voices crying in the wilderness, disregarded and misrepresented. At last, in the hour of humanity's great need, Leo Tolstoy, the enlightener of my youth, thanks to his own consummate power as a writer of stories, has raised the fructifying doubt in thousands of minds. And now Mahatma Gandhi, directly inspired by the teachings of Jesus, by Tolstoy's interpretation of them, as well as by the sacred books of Hinduism, has taken up the message of *ahimsā*, applied it to the different departments of our life, and presented it in a reasonable

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

and attractive form, in which it makes an irresistible, even a scientific, appeal to thousands of seeking souls.¹

To Gandhi God appears as quite definitely ethical and personal (as well as super-personal) in the sense in which He is so to the Christian mystic. I find no disagreement here. Nor does his Hindu belief in re-birth and re-incarnation appear to affect his practical teaching in any way to which the Christian need object. And I find no trace in Gandhi's writings of any attribution to God *as a person* of the emotion of wrath or the function of punishment. It is Mammon, human pride and selfishness, which brings its own punishment and destruction. "God," says Gandhi, "is Love." "He is Tolerance incarnate." "He is the greatest Democrat the world knows." In his interpretation of *karma* as the unravelling of the results of sin, Gandhi seems to come very near to the doctrine of the impersonal, self-acting "wrath" of God, as held by Boehme and Law and some modern thinkers, as it probably also was by the Apostle Paul. Moreover the progressive redemption of evil men is made inevitable by Gandhi's mystical belief in the ideal and therefore the real oneness of humanity with God. "We have but one soul . . . I cannot therefore detach myself from the wickedest soul . . . I must involve in my own experiment [i.e. the *satyagraha* movement] the whole of my kind."²

¹ It is well to remember that Gandhi, in his first South African non-violence campaigns, regarded himself as a disciple of Leo Tolstoy, to whom he sent some account of them; and that Tolstoy in 1903 (about seven years before his death) wrote in reply a long and most interesting letter to him, ending in the following truly prophetic sentence: "Therefore your activity in the Transvaal, as it seems to us at this end of the world, is the most essential work, the most important of all the work now being done in the world, wherein not only the nations of the Christian, but of all the world, will unavoidably take part." (See C. F. Andrews, *Mahatma Gandhi's Ideas* (1929), pp. 192 and 195-7; also the same writer's *Mahatma Gandhi: His Own Story* (1930), pp. 122-5.)

² Gandhi's words at the time of his fast at Delhi in 1924. See *Mahatma Gandhi's Ideas*, p. 306, by C. F. Andrews, to whose three volumes every European at least who writes on this subject owes an incalculable debt.

On the other hand it is not surprising that Western Christians like myself find in the Mahatma's complete programme, e.g. in his ascetic views of marriage and in some important points connected with the purified Hindu nationalism which he calls *swadeshi*, some things that are irrelevant and alien or that even deny the spirit of the essentially Christian as well as Hindu ideal of *ahimsā-satyāgraha*. Nevertheless it seems clear to an increasing number of us, including significantly many Anglo-Saxon missionaries of the Christian Church in India, that (in the words of one of these) "*Satyāgraha* as advocated and practised by Gandhi and his true followers is the central teaching of Christianity—the Cross as an eternal principle for the conquering of wrong [by love] and the transforming of the evil will into a good will by suffering self-chosen and patiently endured."¹

Orthodox Christians have to reckon with the truly remarkable facts that it is not a member of Christ's Catholic or visible Church but a *sanatani* (conservative) Hindu (consider similarly Tolstoy's detached position) who seems to have penetrated deepest into the eternal significance for human society of the message of the Cross, of the atoning and life-imparting death of their Lord; and that it is he who has been given the power to inspire thousands with a devotion to this message, without compromise with the ever insistent demands of Mammon, of Caesar, and of Mars. One may indeed feel sure that, were it not for the restrictions of the Mahatma's very natural loyalty to his Hindu heritage, he would appeal far more constantly than he does not only to the teaching of Jesus but to his supreme example and to his inspiring, indwelling Spirit as the source of *satyāgraha* to-day.

When I ask myself what are the most likely forms of impact of the *satyāgraha* spirit and movement on the course of human history, I imagine the probabilities some-

¹ John S. Hoyland in *The Cross Moves East*, 1931 (George Allen & Unwin).

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

what as follows. The violent policies and intentions of the "totalitarian" States are evil indeed, but to the religious mind the two most threatening features in the world situation should surely be these—on the one hand, the unwillingness of the great Western democracies (so-called), who lead mankind in many respects in the things of the spirit, to divide with other nations in the most equitable way possible their vastly disproportionate share in the control of the earth's habitable surface and resources; and on the other hand, the vociferously declared readiness of the same nations to use up all their available energy and wealth in the most devastating and horrible methods of warfare imaginable, in order to keep their hungry neighbours away from the share that they claim. This desperate competition for material wealth and domination, coupled with the vastly increased capacity of the human brain for utilizing both the forces of nature and the organization of individuals in order to dominate or to destroy, seems likely to result in the whole habitable earth falling before very long under the sway of a number of loosely allied dictatorships, whether autocracies or oligarchies, of varying degrees of cruel and materialistic principles and practice. Attempts made by the remaining more or less democratic States to oppose these dictatorships by force of arms, as well as uprisings of revolutionary violence within the dictator states, will merely intensify the general poverty and oppression, the regime of greed and fear; for amid the horrors of modern war the democracies will either be destroyed as such by their more efficient and unscrupulous adversaries or will naturally fall, by the necessities of military organization, into the hands of dictatorial governments of their own.

Thereafter will be established on a world-wide scale another "pax Romana," atheistic and ruthless in many respects. Yet, just as the Roman rule tended to become

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

more beneficent and impartial after armed resistance to it had been stamped out, so the rule of the world dictatorships, while remaining autocratic and materialistic, will tend towards the regime of a less severe and even paternal despotism.

Nevertheless there will be a widespread and ever growing refusal on the part of tens of thousands of men and women to become the slaves or tools of despotism; and a Christian Church or Churches, purified by poverty and suffering, alongside of purified Buddhist, Hindu, Islamic, and other religious societies, tending ever to draw into a closer intercommunion, will lead a life of intermittent persecution and toleration. (As a Christian I am bound to believe in the eventual world-supremacy¹ of some form of the faith of Christ, but such a consummation may well be delayed for centuries.) The means of defence of these nonconforming associations, against governmental tyranny and against outbursts of mob-violence, will assuredly become more and more exclusively a disciplined, purified and extended *ahimsā-satyāgraha*, the vigorous child of Mahatma Gandhi's experiments in our own time. To him therefore, with his forerunner Tolstoy, men will look back as to the opener of a new epoch. For some time indeed the world-dictators, having no external enemies, and with a diabolically ingenious technique for educating public opinion and the rising generation in particular, may appear permanently invincible. But the divine spirit in man cannot thus be entombed for long; and the power of the ruling class will steadily be sapped from within. In the first place, evil has an inevitable and progressive tendency to destroy itself, the more so if left undisturbed by any misguided, impatient violence on the part of men of goodwill. So internal feuds and civil warfare will break out between rival factions of the ruling oligarchies. And in this warfare, owing to the spread of

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

the *satyāgraha* spirit of non-co-operation, the combatants will find, as years go by, ever fewer tools and supporters among the populations of the globe. In time there will be millions of men and women ready to suffer the utmost rather than allow themselves to be conscripted as the unwilling instruments of violence, injustice, and greed.

In the second place, there is sure ground for hoping that the subtle influence of goodwill, radiating through the communities of *satyāgrahis*, will gradually permeate the rulers themselves and their supporters. This influence will not be just that of humanitarian sentiment, but will be of those who are constantly inspired by faith in a God of love, incarnated in Christ or it may be in Buddha or Krishna, as Lord and as Leader. It will indeed be *satya*, Divine Truth and the Spirit of Love, the kingdom of Heaven among us and in us. In this way the rulers too will progressively become gentler and wiser, and, being impressed by the usefulness of the *satyāgrahis* to the State, they will allow them a greater measure of freedom of action and of self-government. In the economic sphere this freedom will enable the religious societies to become self-supporting and to escape from the demoralizing dominance of machinery, such machines only being tolerated as are proved not to interfere with the most perfect development of man and the welfare and beauty of the animal and lower creation. There will be an ever-increasing stream of conversions to the *satyāgrahi* communities, until at last the vast majority in one after another of the great empires, into which the world has been divided, become sufficiently convinced of the worth of *satyāgraha* to adopt it as the ruling principle of the State, leaving only small bodies of irreconcilables and semi-lunatics who will grow tired in time of indulging in sensual pleasures and in lives of domination in the face of a society which meets them with unwearying patience and refusal to be provoked into

retaliation. Then shall be fulfilled that which was spoken by the Prophet, "Blessed are the meek [*i.e.* the gentle or non-violent], for they shall inherit the earth"—the kingdom of earth as well as the kingdom of Heaven.

Here imagination fails. This is an ideal picture—too pessimistic at short range, you may say, and too optimistic at long range. Nevertheless it is useful fearlessly to face both the worst and the best. It may be indeed that Providence will allow the intervention of some overwhelming catastrophe, in which the surviving generation of mankind will be irretrievably involved. If not, and if we are destined to attain some day even on this earth to the reign of justice and peace, there will assuredly be very many setbacks on the way. The mills of God grind slowly, and unredeemed human nature is terribly obstinate. But, if and when God's kingdom does come on earth, let none fear that with the removal of war and of conflict, external at least, between man and man (and, Gandhi would add, between man and the animal creation), life will become a wilderness of wearisome monotony and commonplace. We may trust the richness and creativeness of Reality that there will always be room for endless adventures of the spirit, for exploration into countless new mysteries and secrets of the divine creation, for the conquest of its many realms by the same human spirit of loving activity and sacrifice that is now at work conspicuously, though as yet in an undeveloped and experimental stage, amid the aspiring masses of India.

The years to come are likely to be full of suffering and darkness, yet they will be also full of light and joy. The writer of this essay thankfully acknowledges how his eyes were opened nearly forty years ago by the stirring words of Leo Tolstoy, so that he made hesitating experiments in voluntary poverty and in war-resistance which eventually

STEPHEN HOBHOUSE

gave him some long experience of a prison cell. He wishes indeed that his efforts since that time had been more consistent and sustained. He is grateful to be allowed notwithstanding to pay his tribute to the Indian prophet on whom the great Russian's mantle has fallen to-day.

An aged man is but a paltry thing,
A tattered coat upon a stick, unless
Soul clap its hands and sing, and louder sing
For every tatter in its mortal dress.

So wrote (without stress, I think, on the epithet "paltry") a great poet of the spiritual who has but recently left us. And just as the aged Yeats could truly say "my muse is still young," so the message of *soul-force* that comes to us from the lips of Mohandas Gandhi's toil-worn and aged body is young, triumphantly young, younger even than it was forty-five years ago, when he was making his first brave "experiments with truth." For has he not in the course of years been growing by slow degrees more incorporate with the eternal youth of the Godhead, with the strength of the Divine humility, with the Divine life that dies to give men more abundant life? It may be that, as Christians or as social philosophers, we can discern limitations upon the clearness of his vision; nevertheless Gandhi is the great soul, the *Mahatma* of our day, the youthful prophet of a redeemed humanity, a regenerated society, of a world yet to be born, a world already, if we also will but do our part, in its birth-throes; and we, who stand beneath the shadow of Jesus Christ, reverently salute him and all true *satyāgrahis* as members of the same company, as fellow-citizens of the eternal City of God, the City of our dreams to be.

W. E. HOCKING

ON FREEDOM AND BELONGING

by WILLIAM ERNEST HOCKING
(Professor of Philosophy,
Harvard University)

One way among the many ways in which Gandhiji has instructed our times is in respect to the dilemma which confronts every man, as he realizes how his local belonging, and all his social ties, limit his freedom of action and even of thought.

Perhaps the first effect of reflection on our institutions is to make one aware of their defectiveness; it becomes hard for the educated man in our Western communities to belong to a Church, since he can accept no one of the creeds as it stands; or to a political party, since they are all tainted with stupidity and self-interest. The study of philosophy has a strong tendency to detach a man from these ties, and also from the ties of family and country. The philosopher must be no partisan; he must be "above the battle." Religion carries the detachment a stage further: in union with the One, all differences vanish, and one becomes the universal being in principle. At the same time, one also becomes useless and meaningless.

Gandhiji has called his deity by the name of Truth; this principle is universal, and above all creeds. He also calls him by the name of Rāma. He finds his way, in politics, to the One; he has a platform of conversation with men who differ most widely from him in policy and interest. Yet he is a man with a party; almost one might say, he is a party in himself; he defines issues, makes definite proposals, continues argument in their behalf through the *Harijan* and other organs; he is the reverse of useless and meaningless.

In brief, he has shown how the detachment of the

W. E. HOCKING

sāññyāsi may contribute to the effectiveness of the statesman; and how the acceptance of local mission and of manifold belonging may contribute to the maximum of personal freedom. For no one I have ever met so impressed me as doing the things, each day, which he most wanted to do and most enjoyed doing.

This is a simple matter—to him—and yet the lack of clearness on this one thing is at the root of much of the unhappiness and confusion of the world. Our own community in America is full of men who are seeking freedom by escaping from belonging and its obligations, from the family tie which they have assumed, from the mêlée of political action, from organized religion, and in the end from their own empirical being with its local insertions. Democracy falters because reflection robs it of the services of those who might best bear its burdens. We have still to learn the “glory of the imperfect”; and that he who wins release by putting off the particular and local is winning release from existence itself, since existence is particular.

Gandhiji teaches us that there is no greatness except greatness within one's own kind; no universality except the universality within one's own province; no freedom except the freedom within one's own belonging.

THE NATURE OF GANDHI'S GREATNESS

by JOHN HAYNES HOLMES
(The Community Church,
New York, U.S.A.)

It was nearly twenty years ago that I declared to the American public that “Gandhi is the greatest man in the world.” My countrymen did not know of Gandhi at that

JOHN HAYNES HOLMES

time—his name had scarcely found its way into our Western world! But since that time his name has become as famous as that of any other living man, and Americans know that I was right in hailing him as “the greatest.”

Gandhi's pre-eminence in this age is due to nothing that is ordinarily accounted genius or glory. He commands no armies and conquers no territory. He is not a statesman in high office, ruling the destinies of nations. He is not a philosopher or sage—has written no great books or poems. He does not even possess those elements of conspicuous and dominant personality which make a man outwardly at least an impressive leader. His genius lies where he would have it—in the realm of the spirit. It is his “soul-force” which has raised him to a position of unparalleled influence and leadership, and achieved things beyond the reach and range of all but a few of the greatest characters of history.

To Gandhi more than to any other Indian will be attributed the independence of India when this independence is at last won. To him also will be attributed the vast achievement of making his people worthy as well as capable of independence by reviving their native culture, quickening their sense of personal dignity and self-respect, disciplining their inner lives to self-control—making them spiritually as well as politically free. Added to this is his great work of delivering the Untouchables from their bondage to affliction—a work destined to be for ever memorable as the greatest single act of human emancipation known to history. Lastly, there remains Gandhi's supreme achievement of taking the principle of “non-violent resistance” and transforming it into a technique for the accomplishment of liberty, justice, and peace upon the earth. What other men have taught as a personal discipline, Gandhi has transformed into a social programme for the redemption of the world.

JOHN HAYNES HOLMES

Gandhi is great among all the great of ages past. He is great with Alfred, Wallace, Washington, Kosciusko, Lafayette, as a nationalist leader. He is great with Clarkson, Wilberforce, Garrison, Lincoln, as an emancipator of the enslaved. He ranks with St. Francis, Thoreau, Tolstoy, as a teacher of what the Christian scriptures call "non-resistance," and better the "love that never faileth." He holds his place with Lao-tse, Buddha, Zoroaster, Jesus, as one of the supreme religious prophets of all time. Best of all is the man, of whom I wrote in my recent book, *Rethinking Religion*:

"He is modest, gentle, unfailingly kind. His sense of fun is irresistible, his simplicity of manner captivating. Quiet, almost soft in his ways, he has an indomitable will and an iron courage. His sincerity is transparent, his devotion to truth inexorable. Having nothing to lose, his position is impregnable to attack. Sacrificing everything himself, he can ask anything of others. Material considerations, worldly cares and ambitions, have long since vanished from his life. The spirit, as manifest in truth and love, possesses him utterly. 'My creed,' says Gandhi, 'is service of God and therefore of humanity . . . and service means pure love.' "

A SOUTH AFRICAN TRIBUTE

by R. F. ALFRED HOERNLÉ, M.A., D.Lit.
(University of the Witwatersrand,
Johannesburg, S. Africa)

It is fitting that among the tributes from all over the world to Gandhi's spirit and ideals there should be at least one from a White South African.

For it was in South Africa, as far back as 1893, that Gandhi first became the champion of an Indian community. It was in the "Fort" at Johannesburg, which I pass every day on my way to the University, that, later, he and many of his followers were imprisoned with hard labour. It was with General Smuts, Colonial Secretary after the restoration of self-government to the Transvaal, that he negotiated for the future of the Indian community in South Africa. It was as leader of his people in the struggle against discriminating legislation that he first experimented with the technique of passive resistance. In many Indian homes in South Africa, and in all public buildings owned by the Indian community, the picture of the "Mahatma" occupies a place of honour. There are still many men and women—both White and Indian—in South Africa who fought and suffered at Gandhi's side. One of his sons has remained in the Union as editor of *Indian Opinion*, which his father founded and which is still published at Phoenix, Natal, the Indian settlement brought into being to realize one of Gandhi's dreams for the advancement of his people. Yes, Gandhi had made for himself a never-to-be-forgotten place in the history of South Africa, before he passed on to devote his gifts of leadership, spiritual and political, to the land and the people of his birth.

Reading the account of his South African life, written by one of his White friends and supporters, Rev. Joseph J. Doke, Baptist Minister at Johannesburg (*M. K. Gandhi: An Indian Patriot in South Africa*), and seeking there the secret of the hold he had over his people and of the deep impression he made even upon many of his White opponents, I am struck by the following things.

First of all, there is the strength of mind which enabled him to practise his belief in non-violence even under provocations which would have aroused the fighting fury of other men to the point of meeting violence with

R. F. ALFRED HOERNLE

violence. More than once he was the victim of kicks and blows and verbal indignities from Whites who thought thus to demonstrate the superiority of their race and teach this "coolie" his place. He never retaliated by force. He refused to prosecute the sentry who kicked him off the footpath in front of President Kruger's house. When he suffered the most brutal assault of all—this time from opponents among his own people—and lay bleeding and helpless, he pleaded with the police not to punish his assailants: "They thought they were doing right," he said, "and I have no desire to prosecute them." Clearly, one clue to the secret of his power over others is his power over himself.

Again, when arousing and organizing the South African Indians to resist legislation the aim of which was to make them outcastes in South Africa—aliens barely tolerated under severe restrictions and debarred in principle from citizenship—he was not content merely to demand abstract rights: more important was it for him to build up their self-respect. He found them dispirited and sunk in apathy, accepting their depression without protest: he recalled them to a sense of their manhood as a moral basis for demanding to be treated as men by White South Africa. His dream for the future of the Indian community, so Rev. Doke tells us, was: "An Indian community in South Africa, welded together by common interests and common ideals, educated, moral, worthy of the ancient civilization to which it is heir; remaining essentially Indian, but so acting that South Africa will eventually be proud of its Eastern citizens, and accord them, as of right, those privileges which every British subject should enjoy."

Thirdly, he knew how to combine leadership with humility. To the wealthier Indians he set the example of public spirit: what he received, he spent unstintingly in promoting the interests of his people. Among the poor

he moved as one poor himself. Son of a prime minister in his home state; sprung from a family accustomed to position, influence, power, culture; trained for, and called to, the Bar in England; able to meet cultured Europeans on equal terms, he yet never sought privileges for himself, but preferred to be treated like any other Indian. When the law required all Indians to register their fingerprints for identification, though he might have claimed exemption, he made a point of being the first to comply, as an example to the rest of his people.

And, fourthly, in the midst of his struggle for Indian rights, he always insisted that those who claim to deserve citizen-rights must be ever ready to substantiate that claim, by voluntarily playing their part in the hour of need, even when no participation in the communal effort is demanded of them. For the fighting in Natal, during the Anglo-Boer war, he offered to organize and equip a corps of Indian stretcher-bearers. After initial refusals, the offer was accepted, and the Indians rendered valuable service: General Roberts' son, mortally wounded, was carried by Indian bearers seven miles to the base hospital at Chieveley. This service was repeated in the last Zulu war of 1906. And, but for Gandhi's prompt action, the outbreak of plague in Johannesburg, in 1904, might have been far more destructive of life than it was.

Such were the character and spirit of the man who first used the weapon of "passive resistance" in a situation of racial conflict, refusing, as he put it, to submit to a law which offended Indian consciences, but still, as a law-abiding subject of the State, accepting the penalties imposed by the law. At the same time, he knew, and said, that the phrase "passive resistance" expresses only half the ideal: "It fails to convey all I mean. It describes a method, but gives no hint of the system of which it is only a part. Real beauty, and that is my aim, is doing good against

R. F. ALFRED HOERNLÉ

evil." In that spirit, he claimed that the Christian command to love one's enemies and to do good to them that hate and persecute one, is in accord with the deepest wisdom of Indian thought and religion.

May I conclude by a few reflections on what I have just now called the "weapon" of passive resistance?

It has, clearly, come to stay. In various forms of application, men have experimented with it since then and will continue to do so. Individuals (e.g. conscientious objectors in war-time) can use it as individuals. Groups, powerless in a political and military sense, can fall back on it as their only possible weapon. As a *moral*, not a *physical*, weapon, it raises political warfare to a higher plane. It involves self-chosen suffering and humiliation for the resisters, and thus demands in them unusual resources of self-mastery and strength of will. If it is effective, it is so by working on the consciences of those against whom it is being used, sapping their confidence in the exclusive rightness of their case; making their physical strength impotent; and weakening their resolution by insinuating a sense of guilt for the suffering they have a part in causing. Whether it is an effective weapon against opponents who have no conscience to appeal to, I am inclined to doubt. Gandhi's recommendation, reported in the Press, to the Jews in Germany to defend themselves by passive resistance, might, if adopted, merely reveal that Nazi storm-troopers and their leaders have no consciences open to this sort of moral pressure.

Moreover, just because passive resistance is a moral weapon, men will rarely in the mass be able to rise to, or maintain themselves for long, on the plane of selfless devotion on which instinctive pugnacity, anger, and resentment are transmuted into patience, forbearance, and love. It is not a "method" which can be practised apart from the "system of which it is part"; that is, divorced from

the spirit of love for your enemies and requiting evil with good.

If a mass of men is to rise to such heights, it needs a leader even more than men always need a leader for concerted action—a leader, moreover, in whom the required courage and moral conviction are so incarnate that by practice and precept he can communicate them to his followers, without needing the devices of high-power propaganda or the support of the bludgeons and bayonets of storm-troopers. Such leaders are rare: a Gandhi does not arise even once in a lifetime.

It is interesting to recall that, at the time, White South Africans criticized Gandhi, because they feared that the example of Indian passive resistance would be imitated by the natives who were, and are, by law and custom kept in a position inferior even to that of the Indians, in order that South Africa may be a "White man's country." Characteristically, Gandhi's reply was that a moral weapon is preferable to rioting, violence, and bloodshed; that the use of a moral weapon presupposes a just cause; and that, if the cause of the natives is just and they are sufficiently high in the scale of civilization for the method of passive resistance to be usable by them, they will *ipso facto* have become fit for the franchise and for a voice in the determination of their place in the multi-racial structure of South Africa.

Thirty years have passed since then. The Indians in South Africa still cherish the memory of Gandhi's leadership, but they have not used the weapon of passive resistance since he returned to India. As for the natives, considerable as has been their development in spite of all obstacles, no one can confidently predict when, if ever, they will be ready for the use of a weapon which makes such exceptional demands on the users. Disarmed as they are, divided among themselves, helpless, their ultimate

R. F. ALFRED HOERNLE

hope lies in this weapon alone. But the day of a native Gandhi is not yet. It may not come at all, but the continued efforts of the White minority in South Africa to entrench for all time its political, social and economic ascendancy are likely to unite against it *all* non-European sections of the population. In that event, it may happen that the Indian community will provide from its ranks, and with Gandhi's tradition behind it, a leader in passive resistance for a united non-European front.

GANDHI IN SOUTH AFRICA

by HON. JAN H. HOFMEYER, M.A.
(Chancellor, Witwatersrand University)

During his recent visit to India to attend the Tambaram Conference that great missionary statesman, Dr. John R. Mott, called on Mahatma Gandhi at Segaoon. One of the questions put by him was "What have been the most creative experiences in your life?" The Mahatma's reply may fittingly be quoted here:

"Such experiences are a multitude. But as you put the question to me, I recalled particularly one experience that changed the course of my life. That fell to my lot seven days after I had arrived in South Africa. I had gone there on a purely mundane and selfish mission. I was just a boy returned from England, wanting to make some money. Suddenly the client who had taken me there asked me to go to Pretoria from Durban. It was not an easy journey. There was the railway journey as far as Charles-town and the coach to Johannesburg. On the train I had a first-class ticket, but not a bed ticket. At Maritzburg

HON. JAN H. HOFMEYER

when the beds were issued, the guard came and turned me out, and asked me to go into the van compartment. I would not go, and the train steamed away leaving me shivering in the cold. Now the creative experience comes there. I was afraid for my very life. I entered the dark waiting-room. There was a white man in the room. I was afraid of him. What was my duty, I asked myself. Should I go back to India, or should I go forward, with God as my helper, and face whatever was in store for me? I decided to stay and suffer. My active non-violence began from that date."

It is not pleasant for a South African to recall this incident, yet it does serve to emphasize the importance of South Africa in Mr. Gandhi's life history. For it was in South Africa that the doctrine of Satyāgraha was conceived, that the weapon of non-violent resistance was forged. Often there is justice in the working of history. India, though not of its own volition, had given to South Africa one of the most difficult of its problems. South Africa in its turn, likewise not of its own volition, gave to India the idea of civil disobedience.

The Indian had come to South Africa because it was deemed to be in the white man's interest that he should. It seemed to be impossible to exploit the Natal coast-belt adequately without indentured labour. So the Indians came—and brought prosperity to Natal. Many remained, welcome contributors to the Colony's welfare, and others followed, both free and indentured immigrants. But in due course the Indian, with his lower standard of living, began to threaten the European in some of the occupations of which he had previously had a monopoly. This was sufficient to arouse colour prejudice—and the Indians came to be regarded, in Lord Milner's phrase, as "strangers forcing themselves upon a community reluctant to receive them." It was this prejudice that was brought home to the

HON. JAN H. HOFMEYER

youthful Gandhi on Maritzburg Railway Station—as a reaction to it Satyāgraha was born.

There is no need here to tell the story of the Mahatma's life and work in South Africa. It was a long struggle, in the course of which Gandhi's chief opponent was another of the great world figures of to-day, General J. C. Smuts. The two men had much in common. Some years ago I visited, in the company of a high Government official, a reformatory for Indian and native boys just outside Johannesburg, which had once been a prison. My companion pointed out to me the room in which Gandhi had been incarcerated thirty years ago and recalled how he, then a junior magistrate, had taken to him books on philosophy, the gift of his ministerial chief, General Smuts. Happily the bonds of mutual respect and friendship between the two men prevailed over all disruptive forces, and are still effective links to-day.

What did Gandhi achieve in South Africa? He was unable to prevent Smuts from gaining his main objective, which was to terminate Indian immigration into South Africa. But Gandhi secured that Indians were spared the dishonour of being named specifically in the immigration law, and he also obtained the redress of several minor grievances of Indians already resident in South Africa. If he hoped, as he doubtless did, when he left South Africa, that the settlement arrived at between Smuts and himself would lead to the disappearance of anti-Asiatic prejudice, he was destined to be disappointed. That prejudice is still a powerful force in South Africa to-day, and some of its manifestations are not to South Africa's credit.

Yet Gandhi's leadership has left an abiding mark on the Indian community in South Africa. He enabled it to triumph over the disabilities resulting from the low-caste origin of most of its members, and he gave it a consciousness of pride of race which has never been effaced. The

HON. JAN H. HOFMEYER

Indian community in South Africa is prepared to resist the stigma of segregation as firmly to-day as ever it fought under Gandhi's banner against dishonouring legislation. But most important of all was the fact that during the years when Gandhi defied the law, crossing provincial boundaries without registering fingerprints, going into gaol and out of it, he was in fact perfecting the creed of self-abnegation, and learning its power and effectiveness as a weapon.

So then it can be said that South Africa played a big part in the development of the man who was to be not only India's Mahatma, but also one of the great spiritual leaders of the world, although its white rulers can hardly recall with satisfaction the specific circumstances which brought that about.

GANDHI AND THE FUTURE OF PACIFISM

by LAURENCE HOUSMAN
(Street, Somerset, England)

Mahatma Gandhi is the greatest living exponent of successful pacifism. He has demonstrated that pacifism in action can be a force in world-politics. It proved itself, that is to say, a stronger instrument than the instrument of government by force and oppression. In South Africa, his success was complete; in India it was very considerable; and had his following been larger and more uniformly non-violent, his pacific instrument would have triumphed.

Such a demonstration of the power of pacifism in the realm of what is called "practical politics" is of inestimable value, and is a beacon light for the future to all nations and races striving for liberty.

LAURENCE HOUSMAN

The success of non-violence is all the more remarkable because it is a method so far removed from the methods usually employed by average humanity, and is so absolutely contrary to the age-long tradition which has misled the human race into the acceptance of violence as a remedy for wrong. The fact that in spite of that tradition Mahatma Gandhi was able to gather so large and, on the whole, so faithful a following, to face up to so hard an ordeal, is to my mind a proof that what he teaches is a latent and fundamental truth of human nature, and that it is neither beyond the understanding of ordinary men and women, when the example is set before them, nor beyond their power to adopt and make practical for the support of great causes.

For all these reasons I believe that Mahatma Gandhi's life is the most valuable in the present day, and while sending him greetings on his seventieth birthday, I could wish that he were many years younger, in order that the world might have reasonable hope of his enlightened leadership for many years longer.

GANDHI'S SATYĀGRAHA AND THE WAY OF
THE CROSS

by JOHN S. HOYLAND
(Woodbrooke Settlement, Selly Oak, Birmingham)

At Madras,¹ in the late autumn of 1938, there was held a gathering of Christian statesmen, coming from all parts of

¹ Much of the following material has been taken from *Harijan* (published at Poona) for December 10 and December 24, 1938.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

the world, but especially from the young Churches of Africa and the East, for the consideration of the problems of the modern world in the light of the message of Christ. Before the meeting of the Madras Conference a unique event took place. A number of these distinguished Christian leaders, men of world-wide influence in opulent and imposing sections of the Church, travelled long extra distances in order to visit, and sit at the feet of, a Hindu leader, Mr. Gandhi. Their object was to gain from him advice as to how they might learn to follow Christ better. It may safely be affirmed that at none of the long series of œcumenical councils held in the past have the Christian leaders done such a thing. That they have done it now shows on the one hand how widespread and deep-going is the conviction that Christianity has gone wrong (largely as a result of its compromise with modern industrialism and modern imperialism): and on the other hand how profound is the belief that this great seer of India has come nearer than we have to the discovery of the mind of Christ and to the practising of the way of Christ.

In the extremely important conversations which he held with these Christian leaders, Mr. Gandhi dealt first with the question of money. He put his convictions in a nutshell, as follows: "I think that you cannot serve God and Mammon both, and my fear is that Mammon has been sent to serve India and God has remained behind, with the result that He will one day have His vengeance. . . . I have always felt that when a religious organization has more money than it requires, it is in peril of losing its faith in God, and pinning its faith on money. You have simply to cease to depend on it.

"In South Africa, when I started the Satyagraha march, there was not a copper in my pocket, and I went with a light heart. I had a caravan of 3,000 people to support. 'No fear,' said I. 'If God wills it, He will carry it forward.'

JOHN S. HOYLAND

Then money began to rain from India. I had to stop it, for when the money came, my miseries began. Whereas they had been content with a piece of bread and sugar, they now began asking for all sorts of things!

"Then take the illustration of the new educational experiment. The experiment I said must go on without asking for any monetary help. Otherwise, after my death, the whole organization would go to pieces. *The fact is, the moment financial stability is assured, spiritual bankruptcy is also assured.*"

Nothing could be more characteristic of Mr. Gandhi's idealism than this last statement. He has insisted over and over again that the possession of invested funds, or secure economic resources, spells spiritual ruin to a living movement. Those who have been willing and self-sacrificing volunteers become grafters, who are in the movement for what they can get out of it. Those who have been helped and ennobled by it become pauperized. The movement and its funds become a cow to be milked, and to be milked more adroitly and plenteously by oneself than by other people. Inevitably corruption and degeneration set in. Every type of hypocrisy and falsehood is encouraged.

The present writer has had some experience of the distribution of relief funds in various countries, after pestilence, famine and war; and is convinced that Mr. Gandhi is right. A really living spiritual movement will dispense with funds to the utmost possible degree, and will be infinitely the stronger for so doing. Mr. Gandhi's views in this matter are derived from his convictions regarding the principle of non-possession, which may be closely compared with the Franciscan principle of the subduing of the "proprium"—the sense of personal possession. The thing is summed up thus by one of Mr. Gandhi's closest disciples: "Money will come for an object to which you are prepared to give up your life, but when there is no



JOHN S. HOYLAND

money, you will not miss it, and the object will be carried on, perhaps all the better for want of it."

Another—and very urgent—topic discussed by Mr. Gandhi with the Christian leaders on this occasion was what to do with "gangster" nations. It is well for us British, by the way, when we discuss such questions, to recognize that many of the peoples of the earth regard *us* as amongst the gangster nations. The fact that we finished compiling our swag in 1919, when we added nine new mandates to the British Empire, and have been fairly quiet and satiated since then, does not make these other nations feel that we deserve the title "gangster nation" any less than more recent aspirants after international loot. Those who find themselves in the uncomfortable position of being subject-peoples within the British Empire are especially eager that as our consciences become healthily uneasy with regard to international gangsterdom, we should not solely be concerned with the gambollings in this field of Germany, Italy and Japan.

Mr. Gandhi was insistent that those who believe in and have learnt something of the practice of non-violence should recognize that even this extremely unpleasant and dangerous phenomenon of modern international gangsterdom can and must be met by the methods of non-violence. "Ultimately," he declared, "force, however justifiably used, will lead us into the same morass as the force of Hitler and Mussolini. There will be just a difference of degree. Those who believe in non-violence must use it at the critical moment. We must not despair of touching the heart even of gangsters, even though for the moment we may seem to be striking our heads against a blind wall."

A little later the discussion turned to the type of creative experience which is likely to prove decisive in making a life effective for non-violent action against wrong. Mr. Gandhi recounted one such experience which fell to his

JOHN S. HOYLAND

lot seven days after he had arrived in South Africa, in the last decade of the nineteenth century.¹

This episode brings out clearly two fundamental elements in Mr. Gandhi's achievement. In the first place, his conquest of fear. Those living in a more or less homogeneous population in a Western country can perhaps have but little idea of the fear with which the average Indian regards—or rather used to regard—the white man. He seemed to the peasant a being from a different planet, a being endowed with almost supernatural powers over the forces of nature, a being to be regarded with an awe which often became servility, a being to be trembled before and implicitly obeyed. It has been well said that the greatest single gift which Mr. Gandhi has conferred upon his fellow-countrymen is the power of conquering this fear-complex in the presence of the white man. He has taught the Indian, and especially the Indian peasant, to stand erect, to look the white man in the face undismayed, and deliberately to disobey his orders, if he believes them to be disastrous for the well-being of his country. Fear is infectious. But so also is fearlessness. Mr. Gandhi has in himself a spirit of fearlessness which he has the faculty, superlatively, of transmitting to other people. He has put the courage into Indian peasants to refuse to pay unjust land-taxes, in spite of all that district officials might do against them. To those who know India this in itself will be sufficient proof of the extraordinary quality of his personality in regard to the conquest of fear.

In the second place, that youthful episode on the railway station at Maritzburg brings out Mr. Gandhi's life-long practice of the belief that suffering can be used creatively for the redemption of others. The incident of the eject-

¹ This is the incident of the ejectment from a train, followed by an assault by a coachman, quoted at length in Mr. Hofmeyer's article on pp. 120-21.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

ment from the train, and of the assault by the coach-driver, may seem trivial. But the indignity and pain was endured, by a shrinking and sensitive boy, courageously *for the sake of other people*. Here was born, in practice, not merely in theory, the idealism of Mr. Gandhi's Satyāgraha, the idealism which says, "Don't run from a situation of suffering: plunge into it boldly, not out of bravado or asceticism or self-martyrdom, but because if you bear it in the right spirit for the helping of other people such suffering becomes creative for the righting of wrong." The gay enthusiasm with which two hundred and fifty thousand Indians were to go to gaol, some thirty years later, so as to win a better future for their country, was in a sense due to the courage with which the lad in Natal had gone through with his rough experience. There is no experience of suffering or humiliation which may not, if accepted in the right spirit, be turned to good in this way for the sake of others. For Satyāgraha is not merely a dramatic method of winning freedom and unity for one's country, or conquering militarism and warfare, or improving a vicious social and economic order. It goes deeper still. It is the principle of the eternal Cross, the principle which says with St. Paul, "I fill up the sufferings of Christ." The man who understands something of this true meaning of Satyāgraha looks backward down the long vista of history, and sees everywhere, all through the slow upward evolution of the race, progress for the type that is destined to survive bought by the sacrifice and suffering of innumerable individuals. He sees a great principle like that of parent-love, or later social co-operation, coming into action, at first feebly and tentatively, later with decisive effect, but always working by the self-subordination of the individual, through suffering and death often voluntarily chosen, in order to promote the well-being of others, of progeny

JOHN S. HOYLAND

(for instance) or later of fellow-tribesmen. As he looks at the history of humanity, he sees the same principle more and more clearly blazoned forth, as the centuries go by. And the whole great key-principle of history and progress is summed up in the Cross of Christ. "He set his face steadfastly to go to Jerusalem." "If it be Thy will, let this cup pass from me."

Thus the student of Satyāgraha is brought to recognize how in leading his fellow-countrymen in a movement for the voluntary taking upon them, non-violently, of suffering on behalf of others, Mr. Gandhi has had the genius to bring out into the open once more a world-principle which the selfishness, the hot-water-bottle luxury, the profit-hunting spirit of Western civilization has obscured from our eyes. Pietistic Christianity has preached much about the Cross during the century and a half since the industrial revolution effectively began. But under the drive of an all-permeating spirit of competitive selfishness the Cross has in reality receded into the background, to become a mere dogma or instrument of purely individual and personal salvation. The great task of our generation—and unless it is accomplished ours may be the last generation of civilized humanity—is the rediscovery of the Cross, not as a dogma, but as a living and eternal principle for the ending of wrong, warfare, violence. We have to learn afresh that Christ really meant what he said when he pronounced the solemn words, "Take up thy Cross and follow me." We have to learn afresh that he meant us to take upon ourselves, of our own free will, privation, suffering, even death itself, in the manner in which he was taking these things upon himself. That is, we must do it redemptively—for the sake of saving mankind from sin and wrong—and non-violently, without hatred for the persecutor and the wrongdoer, without trying to pay him back in his own coin. Above all, we must do it humbly,

JOHN S. HOYLAND

patiently, in the spirit of friendship and good-will.

But with Christ himself, and in his intention with his followers also, this taking up of the Cross depended upon a new consciousness of God. Mr. Gandhi's message to-day rings with the same conviction. We are to awaken once more to the fact of God. God Himself works in this way, the way of non-violence, the way of the Cross. That way of the Cross is not a freakish notion of a few wild-eyed pacifist fanatics. It is the will of the Eternal and Living God, for all effective conquest of sin and righting of wrong. The Cross flings its shadow across all history, and across every individual life. It is God's will in action on the human stage. Christ teaches that God is above all like the father of the Prodigal Son, who welcomed the wrong-doer home again generously and without reproaches, and like the Good Shepherd, who for the sake of one lost sheep leaves home and safety, and goes out upon the wild mountains, amongst darkness, storm, and danger, in order that he may find it and save it. That kind of action against wrong is the will of God, the way of God, the very nature and being of God. God is Love like that, He is the Love that is seeking, saving, redemptive good-will, which takes upon itself of its own free motion suffering, danger, death for the sake of this sufferer and that, till all a suffering world is saved.

That is the God with whom we have to reckon: with whom mankind has to reckon if warfare and poverty and the other curses of humanity are to be conquered in time. We must awaken to Him.

Mr. Gandhi was asked by a distinguished Christian leader (Dr. John R. Mott) what had brought deepest satisfaction to his soul in difficulties, doubts and questionings. He replied, "Living Faith in God." God reveals Himself to men not through individual vision or exclusive

JOHN S. HOYLAND

personal interview (as it were) but through action; in this connection Mr. Gandhi spoke of the experience that had come to him in relation to his three weeks' fast for the removal of untouchability. If we are dedicated to doing the will of God, God will Himself give us all the guidance we need in His own way. Christ said once, "He that doeth the will of God shall know the true teaching." And when Christ instituted the great, but forgotten, sacrament of menial and manual service, on the occasion just before his crucifixion when he washed his disciples' feet, he said to them, "If I, your master, have *done* this for you, you also ought to *do* the same. If you understand the example which I have set you, happy are you if you *act upon it*." It is in *action* of Christlikeness that we reach the fulfilment of our individual life's purpose, and come into harmony with the master-purpose of the universe.

Mr. Gandhi also laid emphasis upon the necessity of much silence in a man's life, if that life is to be genuinely efficacious for the conquest of evil. He spoke as follows: "I can say that I am an everlastingly silent man now. Only a little while ago I remained completely silent for nearly two months, and the spell of that silence has not yet broken. . . . Nowadays I go into silence at prayer time every evening, and break it for visitors at two o'clock. I broke it to-day when you came. It has become both a physical and spiritual necessity for me. Originally the step was taken to relieve the sense of pressure. Then I wanted time for writing. However, after I had practised it for some time, I saw the spiritual value of it. It suddenly flashed across my mind that that was the time when I could best hold communion with God. And now I feel as though I was naturally built for silence."

Nothing could indicate more clearly than these words the deep-lying spiritual basis of the effective power for righteousness which works through Mr. Gandhi. It is in

JOHN S. HOYLAND

these unhurried periods of silent communion with God that he gains the almost uncanny quality of prophet-hood and seer-ship which gives him so extraordinary an authority over those who love him and follow him.

On a subsequent occasion Mr. Gandhi discussed with some others of the Christian leaders, who had just been gathered in conference at Madras, various aspects of the problem of the rescuing of humanity from the impending international crisis which threatens to plunge us into warfare once more, and thus into an orgy of hatred and violence. How can civilization be saved from the "humiliation of impotence" which is gnawing at its roots to-day? It has had the message of Christ for nearly two thousand years, and yet Western civilization has never been able to enforce or implement that message, and is therefore breaking down before our eyes at the present time. There is a profound disquietude all over the West with regard to what is happening, and the prospects for the future. It was fitting therefore that these Christian leaders should come to the man who has outspokenly based his life-work on the attempt to make the central principle of the Christian Gospel—the Cross of self-chosen, unresisting, redemptive suffering—live once more; and has brought thereby regeneration to an ancient world-order which had become in many ways effete. Before our own eyes the Cross has come to live again, in creative triumph, amidst a non-Christian environment, through the efforts of this man.

Is there not a hope, then, that even in the West, hardened though it is by the generations of unrestricted profit-hunting since the Industrial Revolution began, there may come a creative recovery of the message of the Cross: and that this recovery may come in time to save us from the disaster of wholesale mutual destruction which we see looming ahead?

JOHN S. HOYLAND

Mr. Gandhi was asked by one of his visitors what was the fundamental motive in the work which he had done for India. Was it social, or political, or religious? His activities have spread so widely into all three spheres, and have exercised so deep an influence both on the fundamental structure of Hindu society and on the political status of India that such a question is natural.

Mr. Gandhi replied as follows: "My motive has been purely religious. . . . I could not be leading a religious life unless I identified myself with the whole of mankind: and this I could not do unless I took part in politics. The whole gamut of man's activities to-day constitutes an indivisible whole. You cannot divide social, political and purely religious work into watertight compartments. I do not know any religion apart from human activity. It provides a moral basis to all other activities which they would otherwise lack, reducing life to a thing of 'sound and fury, signifying nothing.' "

Mr. Gandhi was asked in this connection whether his service was done through love of the cause for which he worked, or for love of the people whom he served. He replied unhesitatingly that his motive was love of the people. To serve a cause without serving persons was a dead thing. He instanced the manner in which he began in early life to sympathize with, and try to improve that position of, the Untouchables. His mother had one day forbidden him to play with an Untouchable boy. This awakened questioning in his mind, "and from that day my revolt began."

Asked to explain in more detail his attitude to non-violence, which, it was observed, does not seem to be likely to be adopted very widely or effectively in the West, Gandhi said: "In my opinion non-violence is not passivity in any shape or form. Non-violence, as I understand it, is the most active force in the world. . . . Non-violence

JOHN S. HOYLAND

is the supreme law. During my half-century of experience I have not yet come across a situation when I had to say that I was helpless, that I had no remedy in terms of non-violence.

"Take the question of the Jews, on which I have written. No Jew need feel helpless, if he takes to the non-violent way. A friend has written to me a letter objecting that I have assumed that the Jews had been violent. It is true that the Jews have not been violent in their own persons. . . . But they have not been actively non-violent, or in spite of the misdeeds of the dictators, they would say, 'We shall suffer at their hands: they knew no better. But we shall suffer not in the manner in which they want us to suffer.' If even one Jew acted thus, he would save his self-respect and leave an example which, if it became infectious, would save the whole of Jewry, and leave a rich heritage to mankind besides.

"What about China? you will ask. The Chinese have no designs upon other people. They have no desire for territory. True, perhaps, China is not ready for such aggression; perhaps, what looks like her pacifism is only indolence. In any case, China's is not active non-violence. Her putting up a valiant defence against Japan is proof enough that China was never intentionally non-violent. That she is on the defensive is no answer in terms of non-violence. Therefore, when the time for testing her active non-violence came, she failed in the test. This is no criticism of China. I wish the Chinese success. According to the accepted standards her behaviour is strictly correct. But when the position is examined in terms of non-violence, I must say it is unbecoming for a nation of 400 millions, a nation as cultured as China, to repel Japanese aggression by resorting to Japan's own methods. If the Chinese had the non-violence of my conception, there would be no use left for the latest machinery of destruction which Japan

JOHN S. HOYLAND

possesses. The Chinese would say to Japan, 'Bring all your machinery, we present half of our population to you. But the remaining two hundred millions won't bend the knee to you.' If the Chinese did that, Japan would become China's slave."

Mr. Gandhi could not have given a more uncompromising statement of his fundamental belief about non-violence. The trouble with the war-method of righting wrong, even the kind of wrong which China is suffering to-day, is that it attempts the task of "casting out Satan by Satan." It is the use of iniquitous methods of action, the burning, shooting, maiming, torturing of human beings, in order to repel other human beings who are using those methods of action. Such a process can never end the evil will which has made the first aggression possible. It merely makes that evil will more determined and more dangerous. The only effective method of righting wrong is not the foolish and essentially abortive attempt to cast out Satan by Satan, to end violence by means of more violence, but the good-will which voluntarily takes upon itself suffering for the sake of changing the spirit of aggression into the spirit of friendship.

Mr. Gandhi then quoted Shelley's great lines from the *Mask of Anarchy*, lines which should be far better known than they are:

Stand ye calm and resolute,
Like a forest close and mute,
With folded arms and looks which are
Weapons of unvanquished war.

And if then the tyrants dare,
Let them ride among you there,
Slash, and stab, and maim, and hew—
What they like, that let them do.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

With folded arms and steady eyes,
And little fear, and less surprise,
Look upon them as they slay,
Till their rage has died away.

Then they will return with shame
To the place from which they came,
And the blood thus shed will speak
In hot blushes on their cheek.

Rise like lions after slumber
In unvanquishable number—
Shake your chains to earth, like dew
Which in sleep has fallen on you—
Ye are many, they are few.

The discussion then turned to another branch of the same subject. Mr. Gandhi said: "It has been objected, however, that non-violence is all right in the case of the Jews, because there is personal contact between the individual and his persecutors; but in China, Japan comes with long-range guns and aeroplanes. The person who rains death from above has never any chance of even knowing who and how many he has killed. How can non-violence combat aerial warfare, seeing that there are no personal contacts?

"The reply to this is that behind the death-dealing bomb there is the human hand that releases it, and behind that still is the human heart that sets the hand in motion. At the back of the policy of terrorism is the assumption that terrorism, if applied in a sufficient measure, will produce the desired result, namely, bend the adversary to the tyrant's will. But supposing a people make up their mind that they will never do the tyrant's will, nor retaliate with the tyrant's own methods, the tyrant will not find it worth while to go on with his terrorism. If sufficient food

JOHN S. HOYLAND

is given to the tyrant, the time will come when he will have had more than a surfeit. . . .

"I learnt the lesson of non-violence from my wife, when I tried to bend her to my will. Her determined resistance to my will on the one hand, and her quiet submission to the suffering my stupidity involved on the other, ultimately made me ashamed of myself and cured me of my stupidity in thinking I was born to rule over her; and in the end she became my teacher in non-violence. And what I did in South Africa was but an extension of the rule of Satyāgraha which she unwittingly practised in her own person."

Here is another exceedingly important principle in regard to Satyāgraha. It is a movement, a principle of action, in which women can take an equal share with men. Not only so. It is a movement in which women are peculiarly fitted for leadership. For untold centuries the sovereign weapon of womanhood has been patient suffering, combined with an outspoken and fearless witnessing against violence and oppression. Now she is called upon to take the lead in making this same spirit and method the key-principle for the saving of the world.

Let us remind ourselves of the four fundamental ideas¹ of Satyāgraha.

First, there is wrong loose in the world.

Second, wrong must be overcome.

Third, wrong cannot be overcome by violence, which only makes the evil-will deeper and firmer, and renders it inevitable that some day that evil-will, however remorselessly suppressed, will break forth again with tenfold violence.

Fourthly, wrong can be overcome by patient suffering which in the spirit of good-will voluntarily takes the pain inflicted by wrong upon itself, even to death. For such a spirit there is inevitably Resurrection, even though the individual Satyāgrahi has given his life for the truth.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

It is clear that in relation to all four of these fundamental ideals womanhood has from time immemorial known and practised Satyāgraha. The fact of wrong has been forced upon woman's consciousness by the tyranny under which she has herself suffered. Gradually she has come to the knowledge and to the determination that at any cost this tyranny must be ended. She cannot end it by violent methods, and has already too much good sense ever to suppose that the use of such methods can solve the problem of the relationship of the sexes. She has turned to another way of action, unflinchingly courageous protest against tyranny, whether in her own home or in the sphere of national politics. She has coupled therewith—in the case not only of the leaders of the woman's movement but of tens of thousands of inconspicuous individuals—a redemptive bearing of the worst that tyranny can do, in the spirit of self-chosen suffering on behalf of others. The elementary biological facts of human nature, the way in which children are brought into the world and reared, make women not merely acquainted from within with the principles of Satyāgraha, but actual practising Satyāgrahis, though they may never have heard of Jesus Christ or of those who in our own day have tried to make his Cross a living power once more. Every baby that is born into the world is born through self-chosen suffering, and brought up through the love which bears all things for the sake of others.

Therefore this modern call, which has come to us through Mr. Gandhi, that we should make the principles of the Cross of Christ really operative in the affairs of men, even on the widest possible stage, is in reality a call to womanhood to step forward into what may be called a world-wide leadership of ideas, for the ending of the great curses which afflict mankind, poverty, oppression, warfare.

The fact that we men have life at all in the world means

JOHN S. HOYLAND

that our mothers practised Satyāgraha, walked the way of the Cross, not merely in the pangs through which we were born, but in a thousand forgotten incidents in the everyday life of our childhood. They suffered for us, willingly and joyfully, because they loved us. The call to us is that we should go forth in the same spirit of joyful endurance for the saving of all mankind. If we have any sense, we men will recognize that in this task the women have already gone much further than we, and can therefore guide us and inspire us. Without their leadership we shall inevitably fail.

One of Mr. Gandhi's visitors then confronted him with the problem of dictatorships which seem completely impervious to any kind of moral appeal. Would it not be playing into the hands of these dictators if those whom they threaten were to confront them with non-violence? Since dictatorships are unmoral by definition, can it be expected that the law of moral conversion will hold good in their case?

Mr. Gandhi stated his opinions very impressively here, also. "Your argument," he said, "presupposes that the dictators are beyond redemption. But belief in non-violence is based on the assumption that human nature in its essence is one, and therefore unfailingly responds to the advance of love. It should be remembered that these dictators have up to now always found ready response to the violence that they have used. Within their experience they have not come across organized non-violent resistance on an appreciable scale, if at all. Therefore, it is not only highly likely, but I hold it to be inevitable, that they would recognize the superiority of non-violent resistance over any display of violence that they may be capable of putting forth. Moreover the non-violent technique does not depend for its success on the good-will of

JOHN S. HOYLAND

the dictators; for a non-violent resister depends upon the unfailing assistance of God, which sustains him throughout difficulties which would otherwise be considered insurmountable. His faith makes him indomitable."

Here again we may notice how fundamentally religious is Mr. Gandhi's idealism of Satyāgraha, as was Christ's idealism of the Cross. We must start, not from human suffering under tyranny and oppression, bitter as this may be. We must start from God. The first question for us to answer is this, What do I believe to be the will of God, and what kind of a God do I believe Him to be? If our answer to that question is that He is a God of good-will, who works by freedom and justice, and who means His will of freedom and justice to become dominant in human affairs, then all we have to do is to catch hold of the hand of this Father-God—and we Christians can sum up His nature by saying that He is the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. If we thus hold His hand (and we shall soon find that it is rather a case of His holding our hands), we shall be led forward along the way of the Cross, that is, the way of non-violent self-chosen bearing of the worst that tyranny and wrong can do against the good-will which is God's will, in order that others may be freed from tyranny and wrong.

We start from God. At the back of all our discussions, all our plannings, there is to be the fact of God. If we leave Him out of count, we shall fail indeed. And if He is a Living God, He must, as Mr. Gandhi teaches, be sought in silence, because what matters is not that we should say things to Him, even in the most splendid of liturgical forms, but that He should make known His will to us, and show us His way. Such guidance, with the power which comes from laying our own wills in line with the divine will, can come to us only as we wait silently before Him, and listen for His voice.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

Then, as we return to God and know His will in power, we shall become, as Mr. Gandhi says, inspired by an indomitable faith, which will help us to surmount all obstacles.

But we must begin with God: return to Him: that our policies and enterprises may be not our own, but His.

Pursuing the subject of right action against the dictators, one of the Christian visitors asked Mr. Gandhi what attitude should be adopted in the face of aggression which does not trouble actually to use force, but employs the overwhelming threat of it in order to obtain what it wants.

Mr. Gandhi replied as follows:

"Suppose they come and occupy mines, factories, and all sources of natural wealth belonging, e.g., to the Czechs. Then the following results can take place:

- "(1) The Czechs may be annihilated for disobedience to orders. That would be a glorious victory for the Czechs and the beginning of the fall of Germany.
- "(2) The Czechs might become demoralized in the presence of overwhelming force. This is a result common in all struggles; but if demoralization does take place, it would not be on account of non-violence; but it would be due to absence of or inadequacy of non-violence.
- "(3) The third thing that can take place is that Germany might use her new possessions for occupation by her surplus population. This again could not be avoided by offering violent resistance, for we have assumed that violent resistance is out of the question.

"Thus non-violent resistance is the best method under all circumstances.

"I do not think that Hitler and Mussolini are after all

JOHN S. HOYLAND

so very indifferent to the appeal of world-opinion. But to-day these dictators feel satisfaction in defying world-opinion because none of the so-called Great Powers can come to them with clean hands, and they have a rankling sense of injustice done to their people by the Great Powers in the past. Only the other day an esteemed English friend owned to me that Nazi Germany was England's sin, and that it was the treaty of Versailles that made Hitler."

In this connection, the present writer has vivid memories of walking through unending wards of children's hospitals in Vienna, during the period of starvation just after the peace of Versailles, before the American child-feeding schemes had taken full effect. In those hospitals one saw the twisted and tortured bodies of innumerable little children, the victims of our Blockade, and of the horrible diseases to which it gave rise. It is estimated that one million German and Austrian women and children died as a result of that supreme international crime. When Bismarck took Paris in 1871, he rushed food-trains into the starving city at the first possible opportunity. We deliberately starved Germany and Austria for eight months after the Armistice, in order to force from our beaten enemies the kind of Peace we wanted. We got it; and a fundamentally bad Peace it was; but no insults or injustices in the Peace itself (not even the war-guilt clause or the statement regarding German colonial incapacity) were anything like so iniquitous as the manner in which we obtained it, the Blockade. I remember saying to myself at the time, as I saw those suffering children, "There will be a long bill to pay for this some day." That day has now come. The survivors amongst those children, and those who were of the same age at the time, are now the spear-head of the Nazi forces. It is amongst them that the Nazi ideology finds so many fanatical devotees. We, the victorious Allies, made Mussolini by the way in which we

JOHN S. HOYLAND

treated Italy after the war. Britain, for instance, took nine of the fourteen new mandates, and Italy got none. We made Hitler by the way in which we treated Germany and Austria during the period of the blockade and by the Peace of Versailles. You cannot perpetrate international crimes on that scale without sowing the seeds of a formidable reaction later on. If history teaches anything at all, it teaches this.

But amongst the Nazis, as they look back on that period of torture and of humiliation, the legend is inculcated that the Jews were responsible. It was the Jews, so the fantastic story goes, that stabbed the German armies in the back whilst they were still unbroken on the field, by bringing about revolution at home. Therefore they are the first enemy to be punished. Hence the sufferings of the Jews in Germany to-day are the result of the bitter reaction against our international sins, in the Blockade and the Peace. It is not for us to condemn the Nazi policy towards the Jews, for we are the people who brought that policy about. It is for us, in the first place, to blame ourselves; and in the second place to do all that we can for the relief of the Jewish sufferers.

One of the visitors then asked: "What can I as a Christian do to contribute to international peace? How can international anarchy be broken down, and non-violence made effective for establishing peace?"

It must have been a somewhat interesting spectacle to see these Christian leaders, chosen apostles of the Prince of Peace, gathered from all parts of the world, after two thousand years of failure to apply Christ's method of the Cross to the problems of war, consulting Mr. Gandhi, who prides himself upon being a convinced Hindu, upon the right method of making operative the fundamental principle of their own Christianity!

Mr. Gandhi replied:

"You as a Christian can make an effective contribution by non-violent action even though it may cost you your all. Peace will never come until the Great Powers courageously decide to disarm themselves. It seems to me that recent events must force that belief upon the Great Powers.

"I have an implicit faith—a faith that to-day burns brighter than ever, after half a century's experience of unbroken practice of non-violence—that mankind can only be saved through non-violence, which is the central teaching of the Bible, as I have understood the Bible."

There is the gist of the matter. When Mr. Gandhi says "non-violence" or Satyāgraha, he means the method of the Cross. That is why, when he visited our Settlement in Birmingham, he chose the hymn "When I survey the wondrous Cross," as expressing for him the very heart of universal truth. Here then is his testimony that mankind is only to be saved by the Cross, and by our taking the words of our Master literally, "Take up thy Cross and follow me."

When shall we learn what our own religion means? It is profoundly to be hoped that the words of the great Hindu—and far more than his words, his own living practice of the principles in which he believes—may bring the day of awakening nearer in Christendom. Already in the most populous Christian country of Europe the Church is persecuted: and there are urgent rumours of far more bitter persecutions to come, in a vast new Kulturkampf against the Christian Church. Will the German Christians rise to their opportunities for the revitalizing of Christianity as a whole, and perhaps for the saving of civilization, by facing their troubles in the spirit of the Cross, by "entering prisons as palaces," by rejoicing that they are counted worthy to suffer for Christ Jesus? And in our own problems, especially those of the combat against warfare

JOHN S. HOYLAND

and against poverty, are we going to live by the same principle? For the Cross is not only to be borne in periods of active persecution. It is the living principle of self-identification with the needs and sufferings of those everywhere who are "God's little ones" because they are hungry and naked, sick and oppressed.

Mr. Gandhi then described what he had recently seen of the progress of the spirit of non-violence amongst the wild fighting races of the North-West Frontier:

"I was not prepared for what I saw. They are in dead earnest about the thing, and there is a deep-rooted sincerity in their hearts. They themselves see light and hope in non-violence. . . . Before it was all darkness. There was not a family but had its blood feuds. They lived like tigers in a den. Though the Pathans used to be always armed with knives, daggers and rifles, they used to be terrified of their superior officers, lest they should lose their jobs. All that has changed now with thousands. Blood feuds are becoming a thing of the past among those Pathans who have come under the influence of Khansaheb's non-violence movement and, instead of depending for their livelihood on paltry jobs, they have turned to the soil for cultivation, and soon they will turn to industry if their promise is kept."

These last remarks illustrate Mr. Gandhi's belief in hard work, especially hard work on the land. When he was amongst us in England in 1931, he laid great stress upon the necessity for communal land settlements as a means both of solving the problem of unemployment and of re-founding a Christian civilization. The same has been his message in India, and with it the insistence on the daily giving of a generous measure of time to hard work with the hands at other forms of handicraft, especially the spinning of yarn.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

It may be well for us to remind ourselves that when the old classical civilization crashed in the fifth century, it was slowly and arduously re-created by small bodies of men who went out into the ruined wastes that had once been fertile, and there, in the name of Christ, founded tiny communal land settlements, the primitive cloisters. The early monks, who brought back scientific agriculture and then education, religion, refinement, were primarily Digging Men. It was by the Spade, swung not for private profit but for the community, for Christ and for his suffering war victims of the barbarian invasions, that these heroic pioneers built up the great civilization of the Middle Ages, a civilization in many ways far more creative and infinitely more Christian than our own.

It is at least possible that in our own time civilization, such as it is, with its militarism and its industrial competition, may again crash, through a new world war. If this is so, there will be crying need once more of Digging People, who will have the courage to build for Christ by working with their spade not for their own advantage but for the community, for the war victims, and for their Master.

But, if this is to be so, *we must prepare now*. That is one reason why the extensive growth during recent years of unemployed men's allotment associations up and down England and Wales is of such importance: and it is also a reason why it is needful that members of the more fortunate classes should go, in larger and larger numbers, to share in the work of such associations, as has been the practice for a number of years with the Work Camp teams.

The discussion between Mr. Gandhi and the Christian leaders then turned back to the subject of religion. He was asked what was his method of worship. He replied: "We have joint worship morning and evening at 4.20 a.m.

JOHN S. HOYLAND

and 7 p.m. This has gone on for years. We have a recitation of verses from the *Gita* and other accepted religious books, also hymns of saints, with or without music. Individual worship cannot be described in words. It goes on continuously and even unconsciously. There is not a moment when I do not feel the presence of a Witness, whose eye misses nothing, and with whom I strive to keep in tune. I do not pray as Christian friends do" (presumably Mr. Gandhi is here referring to liturgical prayer); "not because I think there is anything wrong in it; but because words won't come to me. I suppose it is a matter of habit. . . . God knows and anticipates our wants. The Deity does not need my supplication; but I, a very imperfect human being, do need His protection as a child that of its father. . . . I have never found Him lacking in response. I have found Him nearest at hand when the horizon seemed darkest—in my ordeals in gaols, when it was not all smooth sailing for me.

"I cannot recall a moment in my life when I had a sense of desertion by God."

To those of us who remember the attitude in earlier days of some of these Christian leaders who interviewed Mr. Gandhi in this fashion, the conversation summarized above has an extraordinary interest. One of the most distinguished of them came to Cambridge when the present writer was a student there, and spoke with measured and dynamic eloquence on the Evangelization of the World in this Generation. Confidence and ordered certainty were the key-notes of that remarkable address. We Western Protestant Christians (especially perhaps the Presbyterians among us) *had the Truth*. The only problem was to get it across to the rest of the world in time to avert disasters in the *East*, due to the absence of the Truth there!

Then came the Great War. And now how greatly is the situation changed! We have discovered that one who

JOHN S. HOYLAND

prides himself on being a Hindu is far nearer the Truth of Christ, the Truth of the Cross, than we are ; and, rightly and wisely indeed, our leaders—these same leaders—go to sit at his feet and learn from him what Christianity means, for in the last analysis Christianity *is* the Cross of Christ.

Ex Oriente Lux.

AN INDIAN STATESMAN'S TRIBUTE

*by SIR MIRZA M. ISMAIL, K.C.I.E.
(Dewan of Mysore; Bangalore, India)*

It gives me very great pleasure to respond to the invitation kindly extended to me by Sir S. Radhakrishnan to send a contribution to the volume of Essays and Reflections on the life and work of Mahatma Gandhi which is to be presented to him on the occasion of the seventieth anniversary of his birthday.

The completion of "three score years and ten" of his life is much more than a matter of gratification to Mahatma Gandhi's innumerable friends and admirers, among whom I am happy to have the privilege of counting myself. Every birthday of his is looked upon as an event for country-wide rejoicing, and his seventieth birthday will doubtless evoke unfailing enthusiasm throughout India.

To me it is a matter of deep personal interest to recall the circumstances in which I have been brought into close touch with this great man, who is both teacher and leader.

In 1927 or so, when Mahatma Gandhi's health was failing he turned to the salubrious climate of Bangalore and the bracing air of the Nandi Hills for the change which he so

SIR MIRZA M. ISMAIL

much needed. It was then that an opportunity presented itself to me of coming into close personal contact with him. The few weeks that he stayed in our midst have left behind some of the happiest memories in the minds of the people of Mysore. During those days I met the Mahatma as often as I could, and the reverence, love, and affection which he then inspired in me have formed the basis of a friendship which I have cherished and valued ever since.

It is a matter of peculiar pleasure to me to recall the very interesting time I spent in London during the sessions of the Indian Round Table Conference; notably in connection with the second session, in which the Congress participated and was represented by Mahatma Gandhi as its sole delegate. He was without doubt the most distinguished of the members from India. He electrified us by the remarkable speeches that he made in the course of our deliberations. The second session of the Conference was made memorable to me personally by the support, though qualified, which I received from Mahatma Gandhi for the scheme which I had the honour of placing before the Federal Structure Committee providing for the creation of a Federal Council as the Second Chamber of the Federal Legislature, to be composed of the representatives of the Governments of the Federating Units. Mahatmaji, who was all along opposed to the creation of a bicameral legislature, was prepared to modify his attitude and accept the proposal adumbrated in my memorandum, if the Federal Council was allowed to become an advisory body. Indeed, as I had occasion to acknowledge in one of my addresses to the Mysore Representative Assembly, "I personally found in the Mahatma a powerful ally at the Second Round Table Conference when voicing my criticisms of the feature of the White Paper Constitution which seems to me to be most open to criticism, that is, the composi-

tion of the Upper Chamber." The subsequent course of events is a matter of history, but I recall this circumstance as an illustration of Mahatma Gandhi's keen desire to help in the efforts to devise a sound constitution for India.

Let me turn from these personal reminiscences to the significance of the life and work of this great son of India not merely for his own country but also for the world at large. It is often said that it is a hazardous thing to predict immortality for one's contemporaries because posterity makes its own choice. But in prophesying immortality to the name of the Mahatma there is little possibility of one's prophecy being falsified by the verdict of history. Contemporary opinion is unanimous that he is one of the greatest Indians ever born. He is unquestionably the most important living Indian and, as I had occasion to say some years ago in a public address, "he may be said to represent the spirit of India and to voice her sentiments as probably no one else can do." He has captured and won the hearts of his countrymen by his universal sympathy and his most passionate allegiance to his high ideals. He is revered by all those to whom the spirit of service makes a strong appeal. Truly one of the most outstanding personalities in the world to-day, Mahatma Gandhi occupies a position in the national life of India which is unique, and he has used this unique position for the benefit of his Motherland. To judge from the extraordinary influence he wields over the minds of the great mass of the Indian people, Mahatma Gandhi may be reckoned as one of the most powerful personal forces in the British Empire to-day.

There is a touch of cynicism but a substratum of truth in the remark that politics is a sordid game, and that its exigencies often demand a compromise with conscience. Success in it, so it is said, generally goes to the man who is not much encumbered by scruples. But here is Mahatma Gandhi, who is the most conscientious, scrupulous and

SIR MIRZA M. ISMAIL

principled of Indians and yet is the most successful politician of them all! He is the eternal enigma of India. A man of rare moral elevation, of unimpeachable private life, of transparent sincerity of conduct and of a strongly religious bent of mind, he recalls to our mind great spiritual leaders and saints. On the other hand, as the inspiring leader of a resurgent India who has given Indians a new spirit, a sense of self-respect and a feeling of pride in their civilization, he is something more than a mere politician. He is a great statesman, a man of vision. Indeed, as Richard Freund has remarked in the *Spectator*, "Unsteadily, tentatively but already visible in outline, an Indian nation is emerging; and Mr. Gandhi is its maker."

It is this combination of saint, politician and statesman which appears so intriguing to the Englishman but which is accepted, if not understood, by his Indian followers. Mahatma Gandhi is among the great men of the world whom all praise but few understand. He has imported religion and ethics into politics and has forged strange moral weapons to fight material forces in the political arena for the achievement of practical results. If he has brought religion into politics and has spiritualized it, he has likewise brought politics into religion and has secularized many an issue which orthodox Hinduism regarded as purely religious in character. The emancipation of Harijans is easily the most outstanding of such issues on which he has led the revolt of intellectual India against the forces of Hindu orthodoxy. But in fairness to him it must be said that his move to eradicate the evil of "untouchability" from the land is dictated as much by his genuine humanitarian impulse as by his reformist zeal and political insight.

Mahatma Gandhi has immense faith in himself—a faith which has increased with his mystical confidence in the efficacy of spiritual force and which sometimes borders on inspiration. He rules and is ruled more by his heart

SIR MIRZA M. ISMAIL

than by his head, by intuition rather than by intellect. He has often been known to explain to himself and his followers a most puzzling piece of advice he has had to give them or most inexplicable conduct in particular circumstances by a simple but mystifying reference to "my inner voice." "Plain living and high thinking" is his maxim of life, and the degree to which he has disciplined his emotions, his conduct and his very physiology is at once the admiration and despair of lesser men. "Gandhi feels that if you control yourself you can control politics." He does not make any weak concessions to the flesh and is Spartan in his tastes and habits. Truth and Non-violence are the fixed stars by which he steers his own barque and by which he has tried to guide the ship of the Congress and of the nation over the stormy sea of Indian politics.

If I am asked to explain the secret of his immense hold upon the imagination of the Indian people I should not think so much of his ability—consummate as it is—as a politician or of the degree of success which has attended the application of his methods to the solution of India's problems. Indians as a race are peculiarly sensitive to character and are more responsive to moral than to intellectual leadership. And it is the Mahatma's absolute sincerity of purpose and purity of motives combined with a sterling personal character that have won for him the confidence and affection not only of his own political followers but of many people outside the Congress organization who neither share all his views nor subscribe to his political doctrines and methods.

It was a little over five years ago that I said, in the course of my address to the legislators of Mysore: "There is one man above all others who can help us towards a reconciliation of our difficulties, and towards that new phase of character that is the groundwork of self-government. I am not one of those who wish Mahatma Gandhi to retire

SIR MIRZA M. ISMAIL

from politics. There never was a time when India so badly needed the guidance of a genuine leader, and in him we have one who holds a unique position in the country and is not only a convinced lover of peace and an ardent patriot, but also a far-seeing, sagacious statesman. I feel that he is qualified far better than anyone else to reconcile the conflicting elements in the country and to induce them all to march together a further stage along the road that leads to self-government. He also has it in his power, as no one else has, to establish the happiest relations between India and Great Britain. I feel sure that Government has in him a powerful ally and Great Britain a true friend. If he should retire from politics at this juncture, there are indications that the arena would, in all probability, be occupied by demagogues and vain visionaries, who are out to mislead themselves and the country by meaningless shibboleths."

A great deal has happened since I uttered these words. Ministries responsible to legislatures have come into being in all the Provinces. The problem of an Indian Federation has come to the foreground of discussion. Gandhiji, as he himself has said, "has ceased to be in the Congress but continues to be of it." But nothing has as yet happened which would induce me to retract or even modify the sentiments to which I then gave expression. With the exception of Mahatma Gandhi who is still the dominant force—as dominant, I should say, as ever—the country has no one else to turn to for ultimate guidance. The Mahatma is a force for moderation, for reason, for practicality in politics. And India can ill afford to do without him either now or for as long a time as one can foresee.

If Mahatma Gandhi is so full of meaning and value to us in India, it is no less true that his life and work possess a meaning to the world outside, which at the present time is so much distracted by wars and threats of war. His

SIR MIRZA M. ISMAIL

political technique, which is essentially pacific in conception, and his philosophy of political conduct, based on the triple maxim of Love, Truth, and Non-violence, furnish ample food for reflection to nations whose mutual relationships are at present regulated by diplomacy, hatred and war.

Let me conclude by heartily congratulating Mahatma Gandhi on his seventieth birthday, and by wishing him many years of health, happiness and fruitful activity in the service of India in particular and of the world in general.

THE AUTHORITY OF DETACHMENT AND MORAL FORCE

by C. E. M. JOAD, M.A., D.LITT.
(Birkbeck College, University of London)

In what consists the most characteristic quality of our species? Some would say, in moral virtue; some, in godliness; some, in courage; some, in the power of self-sacrifice. Aristotle found it in reason. It was by virtue of our reason that, he held, we were chiefly distinguished from the brutes. Aristotle's answer gives, I suggest, part of the truth, but not the whole. The essence of reason lies in objectivity and detachment. It is reason's pride to face reality, when the garment of make-believe, with which pious hands have hidden its uglier features, has been stripped away. In a word, the reasonable man is a man unafraid; unafraid to see things as they are, without weighing the scales in his own favour, allowing desire to dictate conclusion, or hope to masquerade as judgment.

C. E. M. Joad

The reasonable man, then, is detached; detached, that is to say, from the subject-matter which his reason investigates.

Is he also detached from himself? I think that he is not. I have known men of the highest intellectual ability who swore like "nitwits" when they broke their bootlaces, and lost their temper when they missed their trains. Great scientists and mathematicians are not remarkable for serenity of mind, while philosophers, who should be equable, are peppery; philosophers, indeed, are noted for the irritability of their dispositions. Hence I think that Aristotle's pronouncement hints at the truth rather than states it. The truth is that the characteristic virtue of humanity lies in the extension to the self, its passions, temptations, hopes and desires, of that attitude of objective detachment which the man of reason applies to the subject-matter which occupies the attention of the intellect. To combine non-attachment to the self with the passionate apprehension of certain truths and the disinterested attachment to certain principles is to generate what I take to be the most distinctive virtue of humanity—moral force.

It is in the possession of the virtue of detachment from self that, I suggest, lies the source of Gandhi's authority. A superficial expression of his detachment is his control over his body. The detached man has power over his body because, having effected its separation from the true self, he is enabled to use it as an instrument for the purposes of the self. Thus it is no accident that Gandhi can sleep at will at a moment's notice for any period that he likes to prescribe, no accident that he can deliberately lose or gain weight without altering his diet.

Another expression of the same virtue is the combination of a fixed resolution in regard to ends combined with a maximum adaptability in regard to means. The detached

C. E. M. JOAD

man is not a fanatic; he is never so attached to his way that he is not prepared to abandon it and substitute for it another way. Provided that the end remains clearly in view, he will approach it by whatever road events and circumstances suggest. Hence the combination of the politician and the saint in Gandhi which has so puzzled observers; the adroitness in negotiation, the child-like simplicity which is seen in retrospect to have been the most astute political wisdom, the aptness at and the readiness for compromise are characteristics of a man who, firmly fixed in regard to his end, can be non-attached in regard to the means to that end. Thus Gandhi, the instigator of Civil Disobedience as a political weapon, feels no scruple at calling it off, the moment it seems unlikely to succeed; thus Gandhi, the saint who fasts for the good of his soul, is perfectly ready to make use of his fasting as a bargaining counter and to begin to eat again when fasting has served its political turn; thus Gandhi, the implacable opponent of the Constitution, is now prepared to co-operate in working the Constitution which he so strenuously opposed, provided only that the representatives of the Native States are elected by the peoples and not, as the Constitution at present envisages, nominated by the Princes; and thus, finally, Gandhi, the lifelong enemy of the British in India, is now rightly regarded as the best friend of the British in India, a friend whose authority alone prevents not only a resumption of Civil Disobedience, but a resort to the more familiar methods of revolutionary agitation. Will the British, one wonders, extend before it is too late the small concessions that are now asked, extend them voluntarily and with a good grace, or must India become another Ireland, driven by their refusal into an intransigence which refuses to accept the concessions which would now content her?

To return to detachment. Detachment, I am suggesting,

is one of the most potent ingredients of that power so easy to recognize, so difficult to define that we call moral force, a power which men, alone of sentient beings, possess.

Physical force affords no problems and raises no questions. A man is physically stronger than you and accordingly he has his way with you, either directly through the compulsion exerted by his superior strength, or indirectly through fear of the pains and penalties he may inflict upon you, if you thwart his will. It is the compulsion of direct physical force that throws one man over a precipice; it is fear of indirect physical force that causes another to deny himself in this life that he may please God and escape eternal torment in the next. Physical force bestows power, which may be defined as the ability to make other men do your will for fear of the consequences, if they do not.

But moral force can command no such penalties. If I resist moral force, I do not suffer. Why, then, do I obey it? It is difficult to say. I recognize its authority, and, even if I resist it, I know that it is right and I wrong, and I recognize and know these things because I am myself a spirit, acknowledging the superior spirit of another. Thus moral force exerts not power but influence, which may be defined as the effect produced by one human being upon the mind and actions of another, not through fear of punishment or hope of reward, but by virtue of the latter's intuitive acknowledgment of intrinsic superiority.

It was by moral force that Gandhi induced thousands to besiege the gaols, demanding that they should be arrested; it was by moral force that he caused thousands to allow themselves to be beaten to pulp without lifting a hand in self-defence.

The experiment of Civil Disobedience inspired by moral force has an immense significance for the contemporary West. Is it only by devoting all its savings to equipping itself with the instruments of slaughter, is it only through

the willingness of its members to use these instruments, whenever the Government of the State to which they belong deems the mass-murder of the citizens of some other State to be desirable, that a modern community can hope to survive? Is there no way for a nation engaged in dispute to demonstrate the superior rightness of its cause, except by killing off as many members of the opposing nation as it can contrive? These are questions which insistently demand an answer in the Western world, and unless our generation can find some other answer than the one which has been traditionally given to them in the past, its civilization is doomed to destruction.

To Gandhi belongs the supreme credit of having had the wit to suggest and the courage to act upon another answer. Christ and Buddha, he has said in effect, are right. It takes two to make a quarrel, and if you resolutely refuse to be the second, nobody can quarrel with you; refuse to resist by violence, and you will not only gain your ends more effectively than by violent resistance, but you will defeat violence itself by demonstrating its non-effectiveness. It is this method, theoretically as old as human thinking, which Gandhi sought—it is his supreme claim to our gratitude—to apply to the conduct of human affairs. He is a man who has shown himself persistently willing to take the risk of the noblest hypothesis being true. No doubt the method he advocates is in advance of the times; no doubt, therefore, his thought appears shocking and abhorent to the conventional many. Inevitably it challenges vested interests in the thought of the present, unsettling men's minds, alarming their morals, and undermining the security of the powerful and the established. Hence, like all original geniuses, he has been abused as an outrageous, and often as a blasphemous, impostor. Heterodoxy in art is at worst rated as eccentricity or folly, but heterodoxy in politics or morals is denounced as propagan-

dist wickedness which, if tolerantly received, will undermine the very foundations of society; while the advance on current morality, in which the heterodoxy normally consists, is achieved only in the teeth of vested interests in the thought and morals it seeks to displace. Thus, while the genius in the sphere of art is usually permitted to starve in a garret, the genius in the sphere of conduct is persecuted and killed with the sanction of the law. An examination of the great legal trials of history from this point of view would make interesting reading. Socrates, Giordano Bruno, and Servetus were all tried and condemned for holding opinions distasteful to persons in authority in their own day, for which the world now honours them. One of the best definitions of a man of genius is he who, in Shelley's words, "beholds the future in the present, and his thoughts are the germ of the flower and fruit of latest time." To put the point biologically, the genius is an evolutionary "sport" on the mental and spiritual plane, designed to give conscious expression to life's instinctive purpose. He represents, therefore, a new thrust forward on the part of life and destroys the prevailing level of thought and morals as surely as he prepares for a new one. The thought of the community as a whole presently moves up to the level from which the genius first proclaimed his disintegrating message, and we have the familiar historical spectacle of the heterodoxies of one age becoming the platitudes of the next.

It is in this sense that Gandhi is a moral genius. He has announced a method for the settlement of disputes which may not only supersede the method of force, but, as men grow more powerful in the art of destruction, must supersede it if civilization is to survive. No doubt his method has for the moment failed; no doubt he has promised more than he can perform, but if men had never promised more than it was possible for them to perform,

C. E. M. JOAD

the world would be the poorer, for the achieved reform is the child of the unachieved ideal. Because Gandhi has believed, he is himself believed, and his authority in the world, though unbacked by force, is greater than that of any other man.

MAHATMA GANDHI AND SOUL FORCE

by RUFUS M. JONES, D.LITT.
(Haverford College, Haverford,
Pennsylvania)

Anyone who has had the privilege, as I have had, of visiting Mahatma Gandhi and his fraternal community in his Ashram in Ahmedabad, would welcome, as I do, the opportunity to contribute an Essay to the volume of Reflections on his seventieth birthday. He has had a profound influence on my own philosophy of life and on my actual way of life, and I am glad to give public testimony to my debt to this wonderful man, who fortunately for me lived in my lifetime.

Francis of Assisi has been one of my supreme heroes since I began the study of his life in 1905, and Gandhi has always seemed to me to be more like Francis than anybody else whom I have ever known. I was very much surprised at the time of my visit in 1926 to discover how little acquaintance Gandhi had at that time with the "poor little man" of Assisi. I sat by him and told him a number of the stories from *The Little Flowers of St. Francis*. I told him the finest one of all, the one on "Perfect Joy," and the one which tells how Brother Giles and Saint Louis, King of France, met and embraced and kissed one another

RUFUS M. JONES

and then knelt in a long silence and separated without speaking any words, which seemed to both of them unnecessary, for, as Brother Giles put it, "We read one another's hearts far better than if we had spoken with our mouths." Brother Giles's experience of reading hearts without the need of words was very much like mine, as I sat there with a modern saint, sitting on the floor, who certainly had no royal robes such as Louis IX often wore.

I also discovered that Gandhi knew very little about another man whom he very much resembled in spirit, John Woolman, the most remarkable and the most saintly of all the Quakers of the eighteenth century and a striking example of "soul-force." Woolman heard that the Susquehanna Red Indians were on the warpath and were scalping the colonial settlers in the west. He felt "a pure moving of love" to visit these Indians, to endeavour "to feel and understand their life and the spirit they live in, *if haply*," he wrote, "*I might receive some instruction from them, or they might be in any degree helped forward by my following the leadings of truth among them.*"

He found the Indians in war paint and feathers and on the march. He got them together in a meeting in which they sat in deep inward stillness, and then Woolman in much tenderness of spirit told the Indians why he had come to visit them, and finally he offered a brief prayer. After the meeting was over one of the Indians was heard to remark: "I love to feel where words come from." It is a perfect account of the way Mahatma Gandhi works and touches hearts far beyond and far deeper than the words he speaks or writes, because people "feel where the words come from."

We often speak of his principle of life—Satyāgraha—as "non-violence," but that is a negative phrase; while his principle of life is gloriously positive. Gandhi told me that he owed a debt of gratitude to a Quaker, Michael Coates,

RUFUS M. JONES

who in the early days of the former's life in South Africa was his intimate friend and the person who introduced him to the Sermon on the Mount and brought him into a sympathetic understanding of Christ's spirit and way of life and gospel of heroic love, which deepened his insight and his faith in impalpable forces. The influences which shaped his life and thought were numerous, and he has always counted Tolstoy, Ruskin, Thoreau, and Edward Carpenter in his most intimate list of guides on the way.

What he really means by *Satyāgraha* is the manifestation of an energy no less real than that which breaks through a dynamo and operates with notable effects. The dynamo does not *create* the energy; it lets it "come through." Somewhat so is the person who exhibits "soul-force," the organ of a deeper Life than his own tiny, limited, finite sources of strength. The man's soul in its depth-life opens into boundless reservoirs of larger Life and Power, inexhaustible fountains of Love and Truth and Wisdom which under right conditions may stream out through him. The Upanishads speak of "the infinite personality of man" and imply a Beyond always within the person.

The person who finds out how to draw upon these deeper life-energies becomes not only a centre of repose and serenity, but at the same time a centre of heroic love, of adventure and of creative activity. Something like this is what Gandhi means by "soul-force," and his life is a unique demonstration of it. It is "heroic passivity," but it is vastly more.

I asked him once if after all the complications of the difficult world and all the frustrations he had experienced he still believed in "soul-force." "Yes," he said, "faith in the conquering power of love and truth have gone all through my inmost being, and nothing in the universe can ever take that faith out of me." As he said these words he ran his fingers down his lean sides over his protruding ribs

RUFUS M. JONES

and one knew that he was not thinking of the energies of that poor, thin, undernourished body, but of the depth-life of the soul opening into uncounted resources of Love and Truth.

I want to illustrate this gospel of heroic love, this way of life which rises infinitely above violence, in persons who were unknown to Gandhi, but who walked this same path of forgiveness and humility. I shall speak first of James Nayler, the seventeenth-century Quaker who was punished with outrageous severity as a "blasphemer." He had his tongue bored through with a red-hot iron. He was set in a pillory for two hours. He was whipped at a cart-tail through London streets by a hangman. His forehead was branded with the letter "B." It was further decreed that he should ride through Bristol on horseback, facing the horse's tail, be whipped in the market place and then be imprisoned in Bridewell in solitary confinement, without ink or paper, until released by Act of Parliament.

This man who thus suffered man's inhumanity gave this testimony to the world that had wronged him: "There is a spirit which I feel, that delights to do no evil, nor to revenge any wrong, but delights to endure all things, in hope to enjoy its own in the end; its hope is to outlive all wrath and contention, and to weary out all exaltation and cruelty, or whatever is of a nature contrary to itself. It sees to the end of all temptations. As it bears no evil in itself, so it conceives none in thought to any other. If it be betrayed it bears it; for its ground and spring is the mercies and forgiveness of God. Its crown is meekness, its life is everlasting love unsmeared; it takes its kingdom with entreaty, and not with contention, and keeps it by lowliness of mind. In God alone it can rejoice, though none else regard it, or can own its life. It is conceived in sorrow and brought forth without any to pity it; nor does

RUFUS M. JONES

it ever murmur at grief and oppression. It never rejoiceth but through sufferings; for with the world's joy it is murdered. I found it alone, being forsaken; I have fellowship therein with them who lived in dens and desolate places in the earth, who through death obtained this resurrection and eternal holy life.¹ That is a memorable instance of "soul-force."

William Law was the outstanding English mystic of the eighteenth century. He did not suffer to the extent that Nayler did, but he too had his own hard winepress to tread and he expressed in unforgettable words of beauty this same gospel of soul-force. Here is one of his many interpretations of it.

"Love does not want to be rewarded, honoured, or esteemed; its only desire is to propagate itself and become the blessing and happiness of everything that wants it. And therefore it meets wrath and evil and hatred and opposition with the same one will as the light meets the darkness, only to overcome it with all its blessings. Did you want to avoid the wrath and ill-will or to gain the favour of any persons, you might easily miss of your ends; but if you have no will but to all goodness, everything you meet, be it what it will, must be forced to be assistant to you. For the wrath of an enemy, the treachery of a friend, and every other evil, only helps the Spirit of Love to be more triumphant, to live its own life and find all its own blessings in an higher degree. Whether therefore you consider perfection or happiness, it is all included in the spirit of Love and must be so—for this reason, because the infinitely perfect and happy God is mere love, an unchangeable will to all goodness; and therefore every creature must be corrupt and unhappy so far as it is led by any other will than the one will to all goodness. Thus

¹ *Little Book of Selections from the Children of the Light*, by Rufus M. Jones, pp. 48-9.

RUFUS M. JONES

you see the ground, the nature and perfection of the Spirit of Love."¹

Robert Browning, in his *Instans Tyrannus*, has given a strikingly vivid picture of "soul-force" arrayed against a menacing tyrant who is in the process of crushing a poor, defenceless man. This is what happens. The tyrant is speaking:

When sudden . . . how think ye, the end?
Did I say, "without friend"?
Say rather, from marge to blue marge
The whole sky grew his targe
With the sun's self for visible boss,
While an Arm ran across
Which the earth heaved beneath like a breast
Where the wretch was safe pressed!
Do you see? Just my vengeance complete,
The man sprang to his feet,
Stood erect, caught at God's skirt, and prayed
—So *I* was afraid!

GANDHI'S ACHIEVEMENTS FOR THE BRITISH COMMONWEALTH

by A. BERRIEDALE KEITH,
M.A., D.LITT., LL.D., F.B.A.
(University of Edinburgh)

To some of us the significance of Mahatma Gandhi's career lies essentially in the fact that it represents the deliberate pursuit of an ideal despite the innumerable difficulties

¹ *Selected Mystical Writings of William Law*, edited by Stephen Hobhouse, pp. 140-1.

A. BERRIEDALE KEITH

which such action inevitably presents in a world refractory to the embodiment of idealism in concrete activities. For the history of the Commonwealth prime importance must attach to his services in South Africa to the cause of recognition of the value of human personality. In a country wherein the doctrines of the Afrikaans-speaking element formally denied equality in Church or State to those not of European race, he stood out for the essential principle that men *qua* men are equal, and that artificial distinctions based on race and colour are both unreasonable and immoral. When the enormous strength of the forces of opposition is realized, it will always stand out as among the highest of his achievements that he greatly improved the position of his people, and placed the problem of their status in the Union of South Africa in a new light. That since his departure a narrow-minded racialism has once more gained increasing power is a matter for deep regret, but the resisting power of the Indian community has enormously increased since the Mahatma inspired it with the sense of its own dignity and negated the idea that any man or group of men could be properly exploited by others as an instrument for their aggrandisement. Submerged as that ideal may be for a time, it cannot be supposed that it will wholly disappear. In Kenya and Zanzibar also the principles of his teaching have had results in mitigating the efforts of the British members of these communities to take advantage of their influence in England to secure the administration of these territories without due regard for Indian rights. Nor has his effort been confined to the welfare of Indians; the doctrines which he has preached are equally applicable to the future of the Africans, and he has given no excuse for the growth of the doctrine that Indians should be content to claim equality of treatment for themselves because of their historic culture, and to join with Europeans in treating as

A. BERRIEDALE KEITH

inferiors and suitable for servile conditions the native inhabitants of African lands.

In India the Mahatma has taught a doctrine which demands admission of the equality of man no less from Indians than from Europeans. If he has thus created serious difficulties for his fellow Indians, whose sacred texts seem, as is the case with all ancient codes of every land, to give divine sanction for human inequality, he has removed the greatest of all barriers to the recognition of the right of Indians to self-government, the argument that regard for the interests of the humbler ranks of the people forbids that their destinies should be handed over to those whom the Aitareya Brahmana pronounced to be destined to be the servants of others, liable to be driven from their homes at pleasure and even to be slain. The stand made for the Untouchables by the Mahatma, and its success in arousing all that is best in Hinduism, are features of his career which in the course of time will perhaps stand out as the most salient of all, matters in which unalloyed satisfaction can be felt by all students of significant moments in historical development.

The doctrine of non-violent non-co-operation with government has had a more controversial history. It is a creed which demands more than normal human nature can afford, for man is essentially by instinct combative, and those who began as advocates of non-violence have often yielded to more primitive feelings. Yet it is idle to deny that history shows that, for some psychological reason difficult to understand, British Governments will readily concede to opposition, which hampers administration, demands ignored so long as they were presented on grounds of reason alone. If then the Mahatma adopted a technique which involved the risk, and in practice the certainty, of acts of violence, he must be admitted to have had the excuse that thus only could he further the attain-

A. BERRIEDALE KEITH

ment of the ends which he regarded as vital for India. While others both among the living and the dead must share the credit, there is no one who in equal degree is responsible for what is one of the most remarkable achievements in the history of the Commonwealth, the effective operation of responsible government in the provinces of India. It is indeed a *monumentum aere perennius*.

Sanskrit literature is singularly rich in pregnant stanzas, which in youth are learned by every schoolboy introduced to the sacred speech. One, it is permissible to think, became engraved on the memory of the young Gandhi, for it expresses the ideal to which his whole life has been consecrated.

ayam nijo paro veti gananā laghucetasām
udāracaritānām tu vasudhaiva kūtumbakam.

“Only base minds reckon whether one be kin or stranger. Men of noble conduct take the whole world for their home.”

GANDHI'S PLACE IN WORLD HISTORY

by COUNT HERMANN KEYSERLING
(Darmstadt, Germany)

We are living in an age of the most powerful and most encompassing tensions that have ever characterized any period in the history of man. The conquest of space and time has rendered illusory the mere idea of seclusion; the rise of the masses, or at any rate of immense majorities (as opposed to the minorities which up to the world war actually ruled all countries, whatever may be the theories professed), to political and social power has made of the

COUNT HERMANN KEYSERLING

mere number a formidable force, representing, moreover, a definite quality. And since life means an ever unstable equilibrium between opposing and contending forces, of which many are polar in quality—(like the electric energy which manifests itself in the correlation of positive and negative electricity, one pole evoking and even creating its anti-pole)—the changes outlined above have led to a state of things where on the psychical and spiritual plane currents of unheard-of powers, comparable to the strongest imaginable electric currents, act in correlation to each other. The definite ideas attached to definite movements matter little, and they are always misleading; for, firstly, each of them contains and unifies many more components than is indicated by the name given to it, and secondly, the real power behind a “name and form” has in the long run, as all history shows, very little in common with the latter. A movement which began its career with one definite aim in view always grew, as life proceeded, into something different. Accordingly, I do not, in the very least, believe in the accuracy of any of the current designations for world movements; no nation in the world really means what it says when pretending to struggle for Democracy or Socialism or Freedom or Godlessness. In reality all of them grope in the dark for a goal as yet unknown to them, which will reveal its final outlines only after the embryo, that each is now, not only has been born but has grown up. And no single one of the causes that men fight for in our days can possibly achieve final victory: the world of man being divided into gigantic fields of tension, centres of formidable power, only a harmonized synthesis of all that survives—a distant synthesis very difficult to reach—will eventually produce a relatively stable equilibrium.¹

¹ See the development of this trend of thought in the chapters “Tension and Rhythm” of the author’s book, *The Recovery of Truth* (London: Jonathan Cape).

COUNT HERMANN KEYSERLING

And there is one more difficulty to consider: it is not easy to foretell which of the existing great forces will remain one for long, and which other force, hardly existent as yet, may, in its turn, become a world power. But here two principles, the importance of which is seldom understood, can, if intelligently observed, help one to arrive at a relatively correct prophecy. The first of these principles has been formulated by ancient China. According to it, each historic happening really takes place about twenty-five years before it becomes visible, the idea being that the children and not the grown-ups of to-day will rule the world in a quarter of a century; thus, the character of that future can be anticipated by a correct estimation of the spirit really alive among the children.¹ The second principle in question relates to the law of polarity:² each acting force of necessity constellates—to use a very good astrological term—its polar opposite. A very strong thesis, owing to its very strength, creates and vitalizes the corresponding antithesis. The more onesided a movement is, the greater the chances of a correspondingly onesided countermovement. It is from this viewpoint alone, in my opinion, that the exact historic importance of Mahatma Gandhi can be anticipated with some degree of probability; and precisely from this vantage-point the importance appears very great indeed. This age of ours is one of accepted violence as no previous age ever was, for, this time, the majorities of absolutely all countries inhabited by white men are in some form or other in its favour, as are equally the majorities of most coloured races. Owing to this, it seems to me quite out of the

¹ See the development of the trend of thought in the chapters "Politics and Wisdom" of the author's book, *Creative Understanding* (London: Jonathan Cape).

² See the chapter "The Mystery of Polarification" in the author's book, *The Art of Life* (London: Selwyn & Blount).

COUNT HERMANN KEYSERLING

question that this movement demanding change by means of force should end before having exhausted all its chances and possibilities; there will be wars and wars, struggles and struggles, in some place or other of the earth for many centuries to come. But precisely because that is and will be so, a movement inspired by the apparently merely negative idea of non-violence can gain a vital and a historic importance that it could never have—and as a matter of fact never has—gained under other circumstances. All the more so, as the polar tension between the ideal of non-violence and its opposite implies another polarity: that of the supremacy of the importance accorded to the means employed *versus* the supremacy of importance accorded to the ends attained. And it is this latter polarity which, in my opinion, guarantees the immortality of Gandhi as a *symbol*, whatever may be the eventual success of the movement initiated by him on the plane of facts. Indeed, as long as the Jesuit maxim, "the end sanctifies the means" (a maxim really also accepted by the Puritans in their dealings with Red Indians), prevails, a real and permanent betterment of the world's condition seems out of the question: destructive means employed engender corresponding counter-means and so forth *ad infinitum*. As the Buddha put it: "If hatred responds to hatred, when and where will hatred end?"

Gandhi is not the only living symbol of that counter-pole to modern aggressive expansionism, which to-day characterizes most vital peoples, and will, as time proceeds, characterize ever more peoples. Just as peaceful China has in self-defence become aggressive, similar changes are very likely to happen in India, which includes, among others, many warlike races and tribes. But Gandhi is the most visible, most spectacular, most single-minded and most pure-hearted symbol of the aforesaid counter-pole, and he alone, so far, stands for an existing mass-movement.

COUNT HERMANN KEYSERLING

For ahimsā really corresponds to the most vital, because deeply rooted, ideals of the Hindus. And finally Mahatma Gandhi will remain—personally I am convinced of this—a very great historical figure for still another reason: that he stands precisely and exactly on the threshold between two very different ages. On the one hand, Gandhi incarnates India's traditional ideal of a saint, but on the other hand, he belongs to the most modern type of mass-leader. To that extent, his historical position seems similar to that of John the Baptist. Very likely, the one-sided type of saint will no longer play a part in that future state of man which I have often described as the "oecumenic" state,¹ the part he has played in the past: a new synthesis of the Cross and the Eagle² will be its cardinal sign. The new examples of man will be the complete man in whom the forces of the spirit and the earth balance each other. But the advent of this new example will have been prepared, more than by any other living man, by that great dweller on the threshold, whose name is Gandhi.

A BIRTHDAY GREETING

by GEORGE LANSBURY, M.P.
(London)

I am very glad indeed to join the many millions of people in every part of the world who are intending in October,

¹ See in particular the second chapter of the author's *World in the Making* (London: Jonathan Cape).

² This synthesis has been described in anticipation in the chapter "Suffering" of the author's last book, *From Suffering to Fulfilment* (London: Selwyn & Blount). A fragment dealing in particular with the polar correlation of Eagle and Cross has been published in the Indian magazine, *Prabuddha Bharata*, and in the volume dedicated to the centenary of Ramakrishna's birth.

GEORGE LANSBURY

1939, to wish Mahatma Gandhi many, very many Happy Returns of his Birthday.

He has lived a great life of devoted service to a great Ideal, and has demonstrated in his own life and the lives of his many millions of friends and supporters in India and elsewhere the mighty strength of Passive, Non-violent Resistance against every form of evil and wrong-doing. The generation to which he belongs has produced no more consistent, wholehearted defender of the Right than he has been. May he be spared many more years yet to lead, not only men and women in the East, but the peoples in all parts of the world along the Road that leads to Universal Peace, through Love, Co-operation, and Service!

GANDHI'S FAITH AND INFLUENCE

*by PROFESSOR JOHN MACMURRAY, M.A.
(University College, London)*

In the last generation an English poet could write—

East is East and West is West
And never the twain shall meet.

At the time when this couplet was written it expressed a view which could be seriously discussed. To-day this view has become so patently preposterous that it is almost a standard jest. To a large extent the development of communications is responsible for this rapid unification of mankind. One of the effects has been the ease with which individuals in all parts of the world become news and are developed into international celebrities. One finds oneself

JOHN MACMURRAY

wondering how many of these modern reputations will stand the test of time; how many of these international personalities will hold their place in the minds and hearts of future generations as significant figures in world history. In few cases is it possible to feel any certainty. The one case in which I feel it impossible to have any doubts is the case of Mahatma Gandhi.

Human greatness has many dimensions. What determines its permanence is its depth. The very greatest men in history are men whose significance for the world rises from the very depths of human personality. One of the characteristics of such men is the way in which they lend themselves to the most diverse and incompatible interpretations. The greatness of Socrates, for example, reveals itself with peculiar force in the fact that a generation after his death there existed quite a number of rival schools of philosophy, all at loggerheads with one another, and all claiming to be the heirs of the true teaching of Socrates. These men, characteristically, are not writers of books; neither are they men of action, in the ordinary sense of the term. They act in both fields through others. The impact of their personality upon other people is itself a creative energy. The mere fact of their being in the world, as the kind of human beings they are, transforms the world so that it can never quite be the same again. Mr. Gandhi is a man of this kind. His influence depends almost wholly upon the integrity of his own personality, and exhibits itself in its effect upon others, in a transformation of their outlook and a heightening of their human capacities. He might be interpreted as a mystic, as a statesman, as a pacifist, a democrat, a social revolutionary, a conservative of the most reactionary colour. A case could be made out for all those views of the significance of his life work. Yet none of these interpretations would touch the secret of his influence. Their incompatibility would merely reveal

JOHN MACMURRAY

that the significance of his influence lay deeper than the level at which any such classification can reach.

My own respect and admiration for Mr. Gandhi does not rest upon agreement with his views or his policy. It rests rather on the recognition that in face of such a man questions of agreement and disagreement, whether about theories or practice, are ultimately irrelevant. He is perhaps the man in our world who has once again demonstrated, on an immense scale, the creative power of saintliness and of faith in the reality of moral principle. In an age when Western civilization is disintegrating through its belief in material force, in which men have come to look upon the principles of human community as noble ideals which are powerless in the face of the grim realities of material force, Mr. Gandhi took his stand upon the power of moral principle to defeat the organized forces of money and armaments. It is too early to estimate his success or failure. But it is not too early to assert that by his faith he has integrated the millions of India, while the civilization that claimed to dispose of the destinies of India was disintegrating through losing its hold on just such a faith. Wielding, like Rousseau's legislator, "an authority which is no authority," he has created a general will, and made India a nation. By the sublime simplicity of his moral courage he restored to the masses of his fellow-countrymen their self-respect and a belief in their own humanity. And in doing so he has changed the course of history and decided the future of a great part of the human race.

SALVADOR DE MADARIAGA

THE NEED OF A LIFE INSTILLED WITH UNITY

by DON SALVADOR DE MADARIAGA, M.A.
(London)

Mankind may some day look at our age as that in which the most difficult of human arts—and the last to be adumbrated by man—emerged from the cavern age. All that lies behind us, as well as all that lies under our eyes, in the art of government is barbarous; even, if I may venture this paradoxical statement, the idea itself of the art of government—which may after all be but a cave-dwelling anticipation of something as yet but half guessed amongst men: the balance of collective and individual trends in human life.

The taboos of primitive races and the tyrannous practices of their chiefs; the glory of the old Asiatic potentates; the purple splendour and bloody horror of the Roman emperors; the blessing hand and the grabbing hand of the Popes of Rome; the knightly and the infamous wars of the Middle Ages; the daring and sordid adventures of the *Conquistadores* and of empire builders; the gradual evolution of law from command to consent and from consent to common sense; the civil wars of industry with their rough and ready methods of strike and lockout by which the whole community is paralysed to solve a small conflict in a corner of it; the rise and the first—though not the last—fall of the League of Nations; the rise and the first—though not the last—fall of Marxism; the appearance of Fascism-Nazism as the mechanization of tyranny—all this seen from the future, all these struggles, and many more which the nets of mental attention have left uncaught, are but passing forms, imposed by the circumstances of time and place, of the one and permanent problem of human communities—the adjustment of collective and individual trends.

That neatest of all frontiers, the skin, leads man into the error of imagining himself an autonomous, nay, an independent being. We Europeans are far more given to falling into this error than are orientals, but all men in different degrees and shades tend to believe themselves individually defined. Yet a little reflection suffices to show that even on the merely physiological plan a man is but a tree with nomadic instincts which has packed up its earth and roots and hidden them away inside its trunk in order to be able to move. As for other than physical aspects of life, man is unthinkable without men, as much as the coral without a reef, or the bee without a swarm. Man is essentially a unit of a congeries.

But the main point is that this congeries has a double finality. We are not, so far at any rate, able to discern the point of view of the single bee from the point of view of the bee swarm; but we believe—and whether we are right or wrong in this belief matters but little—that there is a final point of view in individual man. This makes the life of man an immense problem indeed; for if all that must be considered were the interests of the congeries, the solution, though still difficult, would be, so to speak, only difficult in one dimension; but when we have to consider the final interests of the individual human cell—who compose the congeries as well, then our difficulty is raised to the square power.

In short, the problem of collective life comprises two rhythms:

The rhythm of the individual, measured in years: three score and ten;

The rhythm of the congeries, measured in centuries;

and two poles of finality:

SALVADOR DE MADARIAGA

That of the individual, who is, or believes he is, an end in himself;

That of the congeries, which is, or believes itself to be, an end in itself.

Nor have we yet exhausted the complications of this system. For there are a number of kinds of congeries to which human cells belong, and amongst them one which is, at any rate to-day, predominant to the point of oppression. The nation is nowadays the form of community endowed with the greatest vitality amongst men. Its life wave-length is measured in centuries. But it is not the longest-lived of all human forms of life. Obviously the longest-lived is mankind itself, the community formed by all the human beings inhabiting the earth; for this community is the most clearly defined of all human congeries, since it occupies all the space and all the time there is. Therefore our system of rhythms and finalities will have to be completed as follows:

Rhythm:

Man
Nation
Mankind

Finality:

Man
Nation
Mankind

All history may be read as the struggle of this system towards its own balance. Civil wars and revolutions under the banner of liberty assert the rhythm and the finality of man; reactions and oppressions under the banner of dictatorship assert here and there the finality and the rhythm of the nation. International wars assert the rhythm and the finality of nations over other nations. The never interrupted struggle towards the higher forms of peace and towards either spiritual or material unity, or both, assert the rhythm and the finality of mankind.

Why is this struggle more acute than ever in our day?

The answer must be found precisely in the fact that while the third term of the series, mankind, has come to the fore in our time at a quicker pace than ever before in history, it has nevertheless evolved much more rapidly along the material than along the spiritual avenue of progress.

Mankind progressed first towards its own fulfilment through its spiritual avenue. The results were disastrous. By a strange inversion of its most sacred tenets, religion led everywhere to strife, division and bloodshed. Mankind then sought to fulfil itself by what is called free thought, the intellectual approach, that which during the nineteenth century used to be called the religion of science. This time its success was complete—but equally disastrous.

Complete because, by giving up all its ideals of unity in order to save scientific truth, whate'er betide, mankind did effect its own unity nevertheless, thanks to the all but miraculous control which it acquired over the forces of nature. Mankind has never lived in its own presence and hearing to the extent it does to-day. Its numbers had already increased *arithmetically* as a result of the first wave of inventions in the first part of the nineteenth century; nowadays they have increased *virtually* by becoming endowed with so high a degree of mobility as to amount almost to ubiquity. This increase in both numbers and motion is equivalent to an increase in density. The human congeries has more *body*; it has also, though to a much lesser extent, grown more conscious of itself.

But the progress has nevertheless been disastrous because the other two terms of the series—the nation and man—refused to acknowledge this change and remain attached to a conscious or subconscious conception of unlimited finality for the individual and for the nation, as if mankind was no concern of theirs whatsoever.

Such is the cause which makes the balance between the

SALVADOR DE MADARIAGA

three forms of human life—individual, national and universal—so difficult of adjustment in our day; but the problem is in itself permanent in the history of human societies. As a makeshift, when threatened by a lack of balance which may endanger one or other of the finalities which constitute them, societies evolve systems of force. Thus, by a curious aberration men are led to mistake strong for healthy societies, or perhaps better, coercive and authoritative for strong societies. Yet it is obvious that in a society progress is always accompanied by a gradual reduction of force or, in other words, that a society evolves towards perfection as the role of coercion in its midst becomes less and less important for its healthy working.

Force in a society is therefore like a surgical contrivance in a human body, an artificial prop to do for a time what life is, for that time, unable to do.

It is obvious that the problem can only be solved on the basis of balance. Defined as is the adjustment of the three finalities—individual, national, universal, neither Liberalism nor Statism (whether Communist, or Fascist, it is all one) nor universalism can in themselves meet the needs of the case. Mankind will not emerge from the present barbarous stage in our history until enough men in enough countries have realized that Liberalism, Communism-Fascism and universalism must all emerge into a higher conception rooted on the sense of the organic unity of the whole.

In its essence, therefore, the problem of our day is less in the doing than in the being. We need not act differently; we must become different. Such is the evolution we must set going if we are to change the world—as change it we must, or else it die, and we with it.

Two conditions must be fulfilled towards this aim—that the trend of the evolution become clear and conscious in

SALVADOR DE MADARIAGA

the leading men of the universal society; and that the sense of it be conveyed to vast fields of human life. The first is a slow process, predominantly, but by no means solely, intellectual. We are witnessing it under our own eyes all over the civilized world, including, despite appearances, the totalitarian countries. The second is more difficult, because the living sense of things can only be conveyed by life: a life instilled with unity is needed to convey the living sense of unity to others. Such a life is Gandhi's. And that is why the Mahatma is perhaps the most symbolic man of our day, for he is not so much a man of action or a man of thought as a man of life.

THE POWER OF NON-VIOLENCE

*by Miss ETHEL MANNIN
(London)*

In penning this brief tribute to Mahatma Gandhi I do so in all humility, as one who has never had the honour to meet him, but as a pacifist who sees in his gospel of non-violent resistance the only practical solution to the problem of peace and war, and the only sane tactic in the social struggle. In the Civil Disobedience Campaign of 1930 Gandhi demonstrated the living power of non-violence, a magnificent example to a world that increasingly understands no power but the sword, and which is seemingly incapable of learning that violence never defeats violence but merely begets it.

I am well aware that the Mahatma did not invent the principle of non-violence, that it has existed in India for centuries as a religious tenet, but Gandhi, as Brailsford

MISS ETHEL MANNIN

has said, reaffirmed it "against the drift of Western teaching and example," and rose to his tremendous moral power as a leader of his people through this reaffirmation. During the nationalist struggles of 1930 he gave to his millions of followers not merely a political tactic but a profound religious faith such as Christ gave to those early Christians who faced martyrdom for their inspired interpretation of Truth.

He revealed to the masses a power not of rifles and machine-guns, such as their oppressors used, but the power innate in each individual unit of the great mass, a power which this war-haunted world has yet to realize, and which exploited to the full can make war impossible. There is something which the politicians and warmongers overlook in their propaganda for methods of violence in achieving their ends, and that is the indestructibility of the human belief in freedom. In a word, rifles and machine-guns will not destroy a man's soul, nor a nation's. A nation may be crushed and enslaved, but the jackboots of Might cannot stamp out the living spirit of freedom; they may succeed in driving it out of sight, underground, for a period, but in darkness and in secret it grows to power again, and the day comes when once more it blazes forth, a light to lead mankind.

There is no enslaving the man who is master of his own soul; to destroy his body is merely to give the greater power to his spirit. Christ upon the cross was infinitely more powerful than the Christ who rode in triumph with palms spread in his path and Alleluias sounding in his ears.

To give back violence for violence is to sink to the level of the tyrant, who understands power only in terms of death and destruction; the power of non-violent methods of resistance is the power of life, of the unquenchable spirit. By his teachings Gandhi may be said to have

MISS ETHEL MANNIN

liberated the "soul" of India; from abject and servile slaves they became men again, their heads held high, a light of faith and hope in their eyes, a people capable of marching on to their ultimate liberation as a nation, without recourse to the degrading tactics of their oppressors. Women laid aside their veils, symbol of their servitude, and marched as the equals of men in the bloodless struggle for freedom, proudly humble, humbly proud, their self-respect restored, free because of the pure flame of freedom which burned within them. Men and women of all ages began to realize that life is indeed a "pure flame" and that "we live by an invisible sun within us," and in the light of that realization there is no defeat.

Nationalist India in 1930 effectively demonstrated the power of non-violence as a practical political tactic; but it was also a demonstration of the triumph of the human spirit. The fact that thousands were flung into gaols and subjected to all manner of brutalities could not stem the tide of this great moral renaissance surging through the Indian masses.

It is essential to appreciate the value Gandhi attaches to asceticism in order to understand non-violence as more than a politic tactic; it should be clearly understood that *Ahimsā* is inextricably bound up with the philosophy of love and the pursuit of Truth, that, indeed, *Ahimsā* is love, universally applied. It is no new gospel, this subordination of the flesh and cultivation of the spirit; it was a part also of the teachings of Christ; Gandhi demonstrates it in relation to contemporary life, and therein lies his power and his saintly greatness.

It is an important part of his teaching that the more one takes to violence as a means of settling a dispute, redressing a wrong, the farther one recedes from Truth, for the attack on the enemy without, he says, leads to the neglect of the enemy within. "We punish thieves because we think

they harass us," he observes, "for the moment they leave us alone; but they only transfer their attentions to another victim. This other victim, however, is ourselves in another form, and we are caught in a vicious circle. . . . In due course we see that it is better to endure the thieves than to punish them. The forbearance may even bring them to their senses. But enduring them we realize that thieves are not different from ourselves, they are our blood-brothers and our friends, and may not be punished."

Therein lies the essence of the philosophy of non-violence, ethically, and as it may be applied to war and the social struggle for freedom. For Gandhi there is no separating *Ahimsā* in daily life from its application to world problems. The path of *Ahimsā*, he acknowledges, may entail continuous suffering and the cultivation of endless patience, but he goes on to point out that its reward is an increasing peace of mind, and greater courage; we learn to distinguish what is of value, what is everlasting, and what is not. For Western civilization it is a difficult ethic, this saintly asceticism controlling daily life, as difficult as Christianity—not to be confused with Paulianity—which it closely resembles. Yet only by casting out hate and replacing it by universal love, only by the total rejection of violence, will struggling humanity ever achieve that peace which is not merely absence of war in its social midst, but that inner peace essential to the well-being of mankind.

Mahatma Gandhi must be saluted as the twentieth-century saint who stands uniquely alone, and who both by teaching and example points the way to salvation in a world which, if it heed him not, is doomed to self-destruction. He should be regarded not as a political leader, despite his immensely valuable services to the Indian Nationalist movement and the political repercussions of his fasts, but rather as a spiritual leader and teacher,

MISS ETHEL MANNIN

his so-called political activities merely as the logical outcome of his ethics and philosophy.

It is not necessary to endorse, personally, the ethics of a saint in order to respect and admire his saintliness. If much in Gandhi's interpretation of *Ahimsā* seems, to the opposing materialist philosophy, anti-life, it has to be acknowledged that on the spiritual plane, which is Gandhi's chief concern, it is very much the reverse; and as Gandhi himself has pointed out, all faiths have produced great men and women. For the world to-day it is as the living exponent of the power of non-violence that Mahatma Gandhi shines in our midst like a beacon light. "Others abide our question; thou art free . . . out-topping knowledge."

Yet his wisdom is for all men, for all time.

GANDHI AND THE CHILD

by DR. MARIA MONTESSORI,
M.D., D.LITT.
(London)

We Europeans see quite a different Gandhi from the one that is known to those who live near him. So, if we look at the sky at night we see a star as a very tiny thing, shining and twinkling. But, if we were near, it would not appear either small or solid, we should see an immense extension of colour and light, devoid of material substance.

To us Gandhi appears merely a man. A very small man, wearing only a loin-cloth. Everybody knows him, even the smallest children, in every corner of Europe. Everyone, when he sees his picture, exclaims in his own language, "That is Gandhi!"

And what do they think of him, our peoples who live so far from him, in a civilization so different? They know him as a man who preaches peace. But not a pacifist like those in Europe. Our pacifists argue and hurry about; they have to attend meetings and write in the papers. Gandhi does not hurry, and he is sometimes in prison where he does not speak and hardly eats. And yet millions of men in India understand and follow him because they are aware of his "spirit."

His spirit is like a great energy that has the power of uniting men because it affects some inner sensitivity and draws them together. This mysterious and marvellous energy is called love. Love is the only force that can bring about a real union between men. Without it they are drawn into a superficial association by force of external circumstances and the pursuit of material interests. But this association without love is insecure and leads to dangers. Men should be united in both ways—by a spiritual force attracting the soul, and by material organization.

I felt this very deeply when Gandhi paid a short visit to Europe some years ago, and stayed a few days in Rome on his homeward voyage. I then felt that there emanated from Gandhi a mysterious power. During his stay in London the children in my schools gave a reception in his honour, and while he sat on the floor and span, they sat round him, serene and silent. And all the adults also who attended this unforgettable reception were silent and still. It was enough to be together; there was no need of singing, dancing or speeches.

But I was still more impressed when some society ladies went to Gandhi at half-past four in the morning to see him pray and to pray with him. Another remarkable fact is that during his stay in Rome, where he was living in a country house in complete retirement, a young lady came walking along the path to the house one morning because

DR. MARIA MONTESSORI

she wished to speak to Gandhi alone. She was Princess Maria, the youngest daughter of the King of Italy.

We must think about this spiritual attraction; it is the force that can save humanity, for we must learn to feel this attraction to each other, instead of being merely bound by material interests. How can we learn this?

These spiritual forces always exist around us, just as the cosmic rays exist in the universe, but they are concentrated by special instruments, through which we can detect them. These instruments are not so rare as might be thought: they are the Children! If our soul is far from the Child, then we see only his small body, just as we see the star in the sky as a little shining point where really there is an immense extension of heat and light. We must be nearby to feel the greatness of the mysterious energy radiating all round. The art of spiritually approaching the child, from whom we are too far, is a secret that can establish human brotherhood, it is a divine art that will lead to the peace of mankind. The children are so many, they are numberless, they are not one star, they are more like the Milky Way, that stream of stars that passes right across the heavens.

On his birthday I ask Gandhi to give honour to the child in India and in the world and to give to his followers, who believe in him and in the power of the spirit, faith also in the child.

THE EVOLUTION OF MR. GANDHI

by ARTHUR MOORE
(Editor of the *Statesman*)

Mr. Gandhi at seventy is younger in spirit than many men of forty, because he is still a learner and an experimenter.

ARTHUR MOORE

He has, it is true, been identified with a body of doctrine, but its boundaries have never been rigid, and I should judge that he has always regarded it as his principal business to seek truth. Giving it out and leading others have come second. And for long intervals he is prepared to retire from leading while he seeks for more light.

I first met him in Delhi in September 1924. He had undertaken a twenty-one-day fast for Hindu-Moslem unity. His friends were greatly concerned for his life, and Mohammed Ali telegraphed to everyone he could think of to come to Delhi and attend a "Unity Conference," in order that Mahatmaji should be at least sustained by the knowledge that his fast had immediately produced an unusual effort to bring the two warring communities together. The summer had been marked by a series of communal riots. I was one of those who responded to the summons, and in the early morning after my arrival Mohammed Ali appeared in my hotel bedroom and told me that he proposed to take me at once to Mr. Gandhi. I found him weak but smiling, lying on his bed in Sultan Singh's house on the Ridge, with the faithful C. F. Andrews and others in attendance. We talked for a time, but Mr. Gandhi was not able to talk very much and I do not remember what was said. But the picture remains vivid and the contact was intimate and pleasant. Since then, although over the years the actual number of times when I have had the opportunity of conversations with him does not amount to more than six or seven, I have always retained that sense of friendship and intimacy that he diffused. As a journalist, and for a time an M.L.A., in a different camp, I had often to criticize his policy and to do what I could to oppose him, particularly during the period from 1930-32, but nothing affected that personal relation. Sometimes we have exchanged letters, very frankly expressed on my side, very sympathetically on his. In 1927 and 1929 the two

ARTHUR MOORE

volumes of his autobiography appeared, and it fell to me to write extensive notices of them. Bound in *khadi* and beautifully clearly printed at his own press in Ahmedabad, these two green volumes (*The Story of My Experiments with Truth*) form a great literary work of absorbing interest, and after reading them I felt my knowledge of what had been a baffling personality greatly deepened. The workings of his mind are far from simple or easy to follow, but his prose in these books is lucidity itself. Moreover, his simplicity and directness in action and his candour in statement are as remarkable and invaluable on many occasions as are his subtlety and intricacy of thought and argument on others.

The Mahatma has led a kind of double life, that of a political leader and a religious leader. As a nationalist ahead of his people he set himself to rouse their national instinct, stiffen their morale, school them in self-respect and the spirit of willing sacrifice. With this he combined an appeal to the popular mind based on his own asceticism and renunciation of wealth, which is very powerful in an Eastern country, and notably in India where poverty and the abolition of desire have long been taught as steps on the path of enlightenment. In his book he tells us that his political experiences have for him not much value, whereas in the spiritual field his "experiments with truth" have made up his real life. The narration of his painful life's journey up to 1927 was in one sense a confession of failure. For thirty years he had been striving and pining to achieve self-realization, "to see God face to face, to attain Moksha." For this he has experimented with non-violence, celibacy, vegetarianism, with every kind of renunciation, and has walked a path "narrow and sharp as the razor's edge," yet at the end of these years all he laid claim to have had was "faint glimpses of the absolute Truth, 'God.' " He had not found God or realized Truth,

ARTHUR MOORE

though he had reached complete certainty that God exists and is the supreme reality.

Mr. Gandhi is a Puritan who is firmly convinced, as he tells us, of the truth of the doctrine of original sin. Life presents itself to him as to all ascetics as a series of taboos, and not as a thing to be thankfully savoured and enjoyed for the greater glory of God. Sex, of course, is the chief root of the trouble, and of Mr. Gandhi's attitude to sex and his chapters on *bramacharya* all that can be said is that he is more completely opposed to the point of view of modern psychology and medicine than one could have imagined it possible for any man to be. Repression, repression, and more repression is his cure for human instincts that he regards as entirely shameful. "There is no limit to the possibilities of renunciation," and Mr. Gandhi was evidently seriously perturbed because he could not yet give up milk, which he regarded as a dangerous and passionate drink that made the *bramacharya* vow difficult to observe. Fresh fruit and nuts are "the bramchari's ideal food," but best of all is fasting, so long as it can be endured.

With ideals so far removed from those of the mass of humanity it would not have been strange if Mr. Gandhi had become, as have some Christian ascetics, intolerant and a persecutor. But nothing of the sort has happened, and despite the inhibitions with which he seems to have made life such a difficult business for himself, his character retains the simple loveliness which has given him such power. Besides his thirst for some pure vision of truth he has that most warming of qualities, a genuine love for his fellow men. He hates on the one hand cruelty and oppression and on the other dirt and disease. But asceticism held him always in the past from setting his feet in a large room, and in his story of his early days continually we see him refusing experience and shrinking from life.

His student days in England deepened and strengthened

ARTHUR MOORE

the hold of his ancestral religion, and it was there for the first time, through Sir Edwin Arnold's translation, that he made the acquaintance of the Gita.

Now even as I write something very significant has happened. Mr. Gandhi seems to be entering a new phase.

Lately Mr. Gandhi intimated that he had received "new light" as a result of his experiences at Rajkot. The nature of the light is now revealed and very important it is. For no one can seriously question the influence that Mr. Gandhi has now for many years exercised over the Hindu masses and the part that he has consequently been able to play in the modern history of India. He was the author of two all-India civil disobedience movements separated by an interval of years which threw the country into turmoil and caused the authorities grave concern. In addition each of those movements left consequences which continued after they had ceased, and are at work to-day. A basic alteration in Mr. Gandhi's creed and teaching given in his mature age at a moment when he has just demonstrated afresh his unchallengeable hold over the Congress organization and the mass mind is therefore a first-class event. It affects more than India, for Mr. Gandhi has his followers elsewhere, and is in fact world news.

In common with others I have criticized the high spiritual claim made for the theory of non-violent non-co-operation, because it drew a spiritual distinction between physical and mental violence. It is a method of fighting which is open to unarmed people, and is on a par with the boycott and the strike, which are indeed part of its technique. It can fail or prove effective, according to the superiority of organization on one side or the other and the importance of the particular issue at stake. But it is not a distinctively spiritual weapon any more than is armed rebellion or war. For Christians the teaching is plain. It is the thought in the mind, the desire in the

heart, that constitutes transgression. The deed is only the expression. In order to gain impetus for a non-co-operation campaign Mr. Gandhi himself has to encourage violent thinking, to denounce the British, to preach against foreign imports. His followers of course went to all lengths in rousing racial hate, and the general result was that probably nowhere in the world was such unrestrainedly violent vituperation to be found, as in the Press and on the platforms of India during a "non-violent" campaign. Actual violence naturally resulted also. That was all in the day's work, and the British did not complain of the form that the war took—for a form of war it was—but what they rejected was the claim that this kind of non-co-operation was on a high ethical plane, was in fact applied Christianity or something nobler still. Bluntly stated, the economic object of boycotting Lancashire goods was to provide work, wages and food for one set of people in India and to deprive another set in England of work, wages and food. Between starving and killing there is no notable moral difference. No honest Englishman would claim that the naval blockade of Germany during the war, designed to bring pressure upon suffering German civilians as well as soldiers to end the war, differed ethically in kind from trench warfare. Or, if it did, it might conceivably be held the lower of the two.

When violence clearly attributable to his non-co-operation movement broke out, Mr. Gandhi's remedy was to undertake a personal fast. He believed that his eight-day fast for Chauri Chaura in some way atoned for the crimes committed there. Later he extended the scope of the objects of his fasts. In 1924 he carried through a twenty-one-day fast for Hindu-Moslem unity. When sent to prison in the second phase of the last civil disobedience movement he obtained release by fasting, and he also undertook a fast to procure a modification of the Communal Award.

ARTHUR MOORE

His later fasts, indeed, including that at Rajkot, seemed to have lost the character of atonement and were criticized by many of his own followers as being of a coercive character.

To criticisms of the spiritual value both of non-violence when added to non-co-operation and of his fasting method Mr. Gandhi formerly seemed impervious. He spoke as if he knew from some inner experience that he was right in giving them this spiritual value, and that even where to all appearances they were failures they were in fact successes. And a host of imitators fasting against this or that, or starting "non-violent" *satyāgraha* against this or that, sprang up all over India.

But now there is a change. Mr. Gandhi has had new light. He has come to suspect his own motives, to think that after all he was working for political and secular ends when he believed himself to be carrying out a spiritual work. He has told us that his fast at Rajkot was "tainted with *himsā*" and that he has now laid down all his weapons. If after all his efforts at purification, his years of ascetic renunciation, his efforts to love his opponents, he now judges that he is still unfit to use these methods, how much less likely is it that there was ever any hope that multitudes could be fit or that those who now attempt them are so?

But more important than this consideration is the great advance which Mr. Gandhi himself appears to have made, and which may well have tremendous results both in India and elsewhere. Mr. Gandhi has been very near to the acceptance of Christianity for many years. His latest utterance shows a new understanding of the inner grace of Buddhism and Christianity alike. The grace of "non" is not abounding, and there is more virtue in co-operation than in non-co-operation. The world is sore beset by violence, and some new dynamic to change men's hearts is not only

sorely needed, but also consciously needed. In all countries there is a demand for it and there are movements which may prelude its arrival—"when man's need is greatest." It may be that Mr. Gandhi's development is symptomatic of much else.

One of the most perplexing moral problems of our time is the attitude towards war. Many Christians, Buddhists, and sincere people of no professional religion hold that to take part even in a defensive war is wrong, that the Christian rule of resisting not evil applies to a nation as well as to an individual. To me—I must frankly say—the Tolstoyan doctrine which Mr. Gandhi adopted has always appeared to be philosophic anarchism. I see no answer to the argument that if we must abolish defensive forces we must also abolish the police. An individual who from genuine love of his oppressor accepts injury may well end by conquering the heart of the oppressor. If the individuals composing a nation, having themselves suffered no personal injury, allow an aggressor nation to injure individuals amongst themselves as much as it likes, their action seems to me unlovely. By a kind of moral passion as dangerous as moral indignation those who preach this doctrine seem to be trying to impose upon others a certain conduct instead of being content to cultivate true humility in themselves individually. The man full of moral indignation against aggressors who forgets humility and finds it impossible to remember the common humanity of the aggressors, and the man so full of moral passion for humility that he spends more time on urging those whom he can approach to humiliate themselves before aggressors in general than in cultivating his own personal loving acceptance of injury in actual daily life—these two (and they represent most of us at one time or another) are not essentially dissimilar. In either case we fail, and are theorists rather than realists. The missing essential for

both at the times when they are carried away by moral indignation or moral pacific fervour is the sense of oneness with humanity. If the morally passionate for collective non-resistance to evil had their way, evil would have its sway, and the grandchildren of the morally passionate would be not saints but merely slaves. Not humility but servility would flourish. Only the rarer spirits in a subject race become lights for the world. The mass have to cultivate the arts of flattery, concealment, and duplicity.

The "pacifist" argument always seems to me to have been finally refuted on the highest plane long ago in the *Bhagavad Gitā* by Krishna in his exhortations to Arjuna. Three years ago I tried Mr. Gandhi on this, but his view, as far as I understood it, seemed to be that the war story in the *Gitā* was symbolic and not actual, and that the argument did not apply to physical war and actual taking of life.

But since Rajkot there seems to me to be a new Mahatma. We must all revere a man who has throughout a life of devoted service persisted in the sternest self-discipline, the most exacting renunciations, the passion for self-purification. If he has reached a new illumination, then the light will shine brightly indeed from a mirror to the making of which so many years and so much effort have gone. From every country comes the recognition that the hope of the world lies in the individual soul of man. Each has to begin on himself. But we need a power to produce the silence when we can hear our own souls speak. Otherwise we may go sadly astray. Some already, carried away by moral passion, are very noisy about their quiet times, and seem more anxious to make converts than to listen in. In India, at least, Mr. Gandhi could produce a stillness in which true peace might be born.

GILBERT MURRAY

GANDHI'S SPIRITUAL AUTHORITY

*by GILBERT MURRAY, M.A., D.C.L.
(Emeritus Professor, University of Oxford)*

In a world where the rulers of nations are relying more and more upon brute force and the nations trusting their lives and hopes to systems which represent the very denial of law and brotherhood, Mr. Gandhi stands out as an isolated and most impressive figure. He is a ruler obeyed by millions, not because they fear him but because they love him; not as the master of wealth and secret police and machine-guns, but as holding that spiritual authority which, when it once dares to assert itself, seems to reduce almost to impotence the values of the material world. I say "seems": for against purely material force, untinged by conscience or pity, it would be helpless. It only wins its battles because of its secret appeal to the spiritual element in its enemy, that humane element from which man, in his utmost effort to be brutal, cannot quite shake himself free. "A battle of the unaided human soul against overwhelming material force; and it ends by the units of material force gradually deserting their own banners and coming round to the side of the soul!" So I wrote about Mr. Gandhi twenty years ago.

We cannot, of course, assume that a spiritual authority is always right in its guidance. Its claims and professions can seldom be proved or disproved. It is directed by human beings, who are subject to ordinary human frailties and as liable as other autocrats to be corrupted by power. But among spiritual rulers, as among rulers in general, Mr. Gandhi stands out as almost unique. In the first place, he utters no dogma, no command, only an appeal; he calls to our spirits; he shows what he holds to be the truth,

GILBERT MURRAY

but does not exclude or condemn those who seek the light in some other way.

In the second place he is unique in his manner of fighting, as was shown best in his fifteen years' struggle for the rights of Indians in South Africa. He and his followers were repeatedly imprisoned, herded with criminals, treated as sub-human creatures, yet whenever the Government which oppressed him were weak or in trouble, instead of pressing his advantage he turned and helped them. When they were involved in a dangerous war he organized a special corps of Indian stretcher-bearers to help them; when, in the midst of a non-violent strike by his Indian followers, the Government were suddenly threatened by a revolutionary railway strike, he immediately gave orders for his people to resume work until his opponents should be safe again. No wonder that he won the day. No genuinely human enemy could hold out against that method of fighting.

Thirdly, perhaps the hardest point of all for a leader who is worshipped and idealized by immense multitudes, he never claims to be infallible. I see that at this moment he is calling a pause in his "non-co-operation" campaign, in order that he, as well as his opponents, may wait and think.

The spiritual authority of one unarmed man over great multitudes is in itself wonderful, but when that man not only abjures violence and helps his enemies in their need, but also recognizes his own human fallibility, he claims unanswerably the admiration of the whole world. From a distant country, from a quite alien civilization, with different views from his on many practical questions, out of the careworn and striving movements of thought in Europe, where the human conscience and intellect seem for the moment to stand helpless under the bludgeons of ignorance and brute force, I gladly give this great man

GILBERT MURRAY

the title his disciples claim for him and hail with reverence
“Mahatma Gandhi.”

A VISIT FROM THE FAR EAST

by YONE NOGUCHI
(Keio University, Tokyo, Japan)

Leaving Nagpur for Bombay towards the end of December 1935, I stopped over at Wardha, an insignificant country town but the spiritual centre of the Gandhi movement. I was glad to see Gandhi with a fitting background in his Ashram, a monastery or refuge, where, unlike the ancient ascetic, this modern prophet responds to every pulsation of hope or pain in his nation's life. In view of his illness, he was lying down in a tent pitched upon the flat roof of a two-storeyed concrete house, square in form with a yard in the centre. I found him with a saintly little smile revealing his broken teeth, stretching out his bare legs, as lean as a cricket's and as stiff as steel wire, which one of his disciples was shampooing. I found difficulty in connecting this seemingly simple and unaffected man with the heroic fasts that had made the mammoth soul of England once tremble in fear. Noticing that he put on his head something wrapped in cotton cloth, I asked him what it was. He said that it was wet earth which, according to his doctors' advice, was good for a man like him whose blood pressure was high. Then with a smile in which cynicism and philosophy commingled, he explained: “I sprang from Indian earth. So it is Indian earth that crowns me.”

After a little talk, I bade him farewell and descended the stairs to meet three or four of his disciples, who were

waiting to take me round the Ashram. Passing by a place containing beehives, I was taken into a shed to see a bull turning a stone mortar and making oil out of rape-seeds. Then I went to another place where paper-making experiments were in progress. One of the disciples said: "How simple it is to make paper! If this paper-making becomes popular in our country as a subsidiary industry, we shall be able to keep a great deal of money at home." It need hardly be said that the spinning-wheel, the Charkha, holds an important position in the Ashram. A little flat wooden box was brought out, which revealed, when uncovered, a miniature wheel invented by Gandhi himself during his leisure moments in prison. The explainer said: "You can put it even into a handbag and carry it in the train to fill the vacant hours by turning it."

Then he said further: "Gandhi is remarkably scientific. And his patience always brings his inventive mind to complete success. Had he been a watchmaker he would have the best watch in the world to his credit. As a surgeon or a lawyer he would also fill the highest place. But describing himself as a farmer and a weaver by profession at his trial in 1922 he pledged himself to the sacredness of manual labour. Among the various kinds of such work he regards weaving most highly because it gives one a habit of exactitude and a mental training in keeping strictly to the law of economy. Gandhi hates waste more than anything else. Believing that manual labour alone can give a new life to India, he makes the Charkha his own symbol and calls the people to the holy banner of an independent life." It is only incidental that his movement appears to be a rebellion against the British yoke, because, while seeking to save India from corruption, it would also save the other countries of the world through its great lesson of creative energy, the propagation of life close to the soil. The importance of service within one's immediate surroundings

as against a groping after distant ideals, is not limited to India only: the manliness of the "self-supporting and self-sufficing" Swadeshi spirit must be recognized through all time and throughout the whole world.

Gandhi cannot find any higher way of worshipping God than by serving the poor and identifying himself with them. When he goes on a railway journey, for instance, he always takes a third-class ticket, reminding himself that he also belongs to the lower orders of mankind where humanity and love are found to be the richest. As one who has spent the best part of his life with working-class people and has shared joys and sorrows with them equally, Gandhi offers to his friends the spinning-wheel as an inspiration of the "self-supporting and self-sufficing" life.

Lying alone in my compartment of the train for Bombay, I could not put away from my mind for some time the image of Mahatma Gandhi. Once I had the pleasure of reading his little essay entitled "Voluntary Poverty," in which he expressed his joy at discarding the things that belonged to him before. For anybody in a country like India to live with anything more than bare necessities, he believes, means living like a robber. Unless you be like one who sleeps outside with nothing on his body, you have no right to declare that you can save India and the Indians. I am told that even the cloth with which Gandhi covers his loins is reduced to the very minimum. It was natural that Gandhi should advance from this eulogy of poverty into asceticism through which one's five senses are to be controlled as a method of self-purification.

A warrior in combat near Heaven with a prospect of unseen
victory,
Blowing a bugle that rings to the last gulf of Hell,
A lonely hero challenging the future for response.
Withered and thin,
But with a mammoth soul shaking the world in fear—

YONE NOGUCHI

Through this man love, profaned and ignored,
Through this man life's independence, shattered and fallen,
Through this man, body-labour bereft of honour and prize,
Cry rebel-call against tyranny; to God's justice be praise!
A sad chanter of life close to the mother-earth,
(Where is there a more burning patriot than this man?)
A lone seeker of truth denying the night and self-pleasure,
(Where is there a more prophetic soul than this man's?)
A pilgrim along the endless road of hunger and sorrow.

GANDHI IN HIS MANY ASPECTS

by B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA,
B.A., M.B., C.M.
(Masulipatam, India)

I. Gandhi—the Avatār

"Be careful in dealing with a man who cares nothing for sensual pleasures, nothing for comfort or praise or promotion, but is simply determined to do what he believes to be right. He is a dangerous and uncomfortable enemy because his body which you can always conquer gives you so little purchase over his soul."

(Professor GILBERT MURRAY)

The world has produced great men from time to time. Each nation has produced its own saints, martyrs, and heroes, its own poets, warriors and statesmen. In India we call our great men *avatārs*, men who descend on earth from on high as embodiments of the Divine, in order to protect and punish vice. We have in our midst an *avatār* in *Gandhi* who has worked out the gospel of perfect non-violence in the work-a-day world.

II. Gandhi—the Sthitaprajña

In Gandhi's view Swarāj is not the replacement of the white bureaucracy by the brown. It is the total recasting of life, indeed a reconquest of India. To reunite the various fragments dismembered territorially into provinces and states, cut up communally into Hindus and Muslims and Christians, divided professionally into rural and urban folk, and split up diagonally into *excluded* and *included* areas, that is the problem envisaged by him. The other part of the task is to restore the culture of the nation and charge it with all that is worth copying in modern life, to resuscitate the ideal of service, to supplant the selfishness fostered by the new civilization by a feeling of pity for the poor, to level up the low, instead of suffering society to be composed of tall oaks and short poppies, to ensure food and raiment to all to lower, if need be, the standard of life on the average instead of raising it for a few. To this end he has evolved a new synthesis in his own life and has combined in himself the four *varṇas* and the four *āśrams* of Hindu society. He fulfils the role of a *Brahman* and is the lawgiver, he is a *Kṣatriya* and is the Chief Constable of India. As a *Vaiśya* he mobilizes the wealth of the country and as *Śūdra* he has produced food and raiment. In the great trial he said, "I am a weaver and farmer." And then although a *grīhastha*, he leads a life of celibacy like a *Brahmacāri*, serves mankind along with his wife like a *vānaprastha* and is finally a true *Saññyasi*, having given up his all in his ministry to mankind. All the while Gandhi is essentially a man with no superhuman touch or pretensions about him. He is a business man, a man of humour, wit and wisdom, a child amongst children, a "jolly good fellow" among the grown-ups, and a saint and sage amongst mankind, a guide, philosopher and friend to all. He has a beaming countenance with a pair of scintillating eyes.

and a laugh which lays bare his whole heart from within. He is frank to a degree and never believes in hearing charges behind people's backs but always puts them to the accused in the presence of his accusers. He accepts your explanation, takes your word for truth. He is precise in his talk and expects his statements to be understood both with reference to his *subjunctives* and his *principal* clauses. Most people have taken the latter and ignored the former and therefore expected objective results without bearing subjective burdens. His style is all his own, composed of short sentences shot out like veritable shrapnel in a *feu de joie* at a new-year parade, dynamic in force and devastating in effect. Gandhi is the full man—the *Purna puruṣa* of the Upaniṣads whom it is a privilege to know and a blessing to work with. He is the *Sthita prajña* of the Bhagavadgītā who by his self-control and renunciation has conquered himself and conquered the world.

III. Gandhi—His Dual Programme

As a satyāgrahi Gandhi knows no defeat. If the nation is tired of the offensive, it is at once put on the constructive programme. From the fast pulley to the loose, the belt in the workshop does not glide with greater ease than Gandhi's power belt from the destructive plane of fight to the constructive. With equal swiftness and suddenness does he switch on the aggressive programme of Civil Disobedience and it develops momentum with the vehemence and rapidity of a tornado or a tidal wave. What his offensives are like, the world knows only too well. He himself did not know what mass civil disobedience would be like, but he knew that it would be disobedience which must be civil or non-violent in character and worked on a mass scale of immeasurable proportions. A moral issue is always involved in his campaigns which are seem-

ingly insignificant in character but single-pointed in aim and far-reaching in results. Here it is the Amritsar massacre for which an apology is demanded. There it is the Khilafat wrong, remote in its seat and scene but proximate in its effects and influence. Elsewhere it is the salt tax, trivial in incidence but sinful in its yield. When the world thinks that Gandhi has sustained defeat he converts that defeat by a sentence into victory.

Gandhi's constructive programme has met with a mixed reception in the country, has not, even now, captivated the imagination of the bulk of the population. His Khaddar is the poor man's panacea, the new economic talisman, the hope of the widow and the orphan, the maimed and the blind; a collateral industry that serves as a staff supporting the peasant weighed down by an unbearable burden of indebtedness and taxation. The revival of Khaddar stands for a whole cult, for it reacts against the backstroke of machinery which is a good servant but a bad master. Khaddar symbolizes the revival of the creative genius of India, the sense of freedom and ownership that has always animated the Indian craftsman, the atmosphere of purity and family compactness in which the Indian arts have all along thriven. Khadi is the uniform of the Indian patriot, and the badge of national emancipation. The first five years of Gandhi's ministry were devoted to the task of placing Khaddar on a stable basis so that it might lead the way to other village industries and home crafts and retrain all machinery, which is merely *violence in motion*, to its strict limits in life.

Gandhi's constructive programme is a three-fold one—*Economic* in Khaddar, *Social* in the removal of untouchability and *Moral* in the abolition of drink. After achieving the first he addressed himself to the second and the story of his fast unto death in September 1932 is now a chapter of world's history. The third *prohibition* is being imple-

mented as a part of the ministerial programme under the scheme of provincial autonomy. Only a few weeks ago did Gandhi express his sad disappointment at the slack pace at which this reform is being achieved by his trusty colleagues; for three and a half years is the limit he has set for the complete eradication of drink from India. The fourth item is cultural and relates to *national education*, for which an All India Board has been formed at Haripura and under its auspices a system of primary education known as the Wardha scheme is being propagated with the object of linking up the child's education with the life of the nation. There remains but one great reform to achieve—namely *communal unity*—notably Hindu-Muslim unity. The draft formula is all but ready and the process of unification contemplated is not one of bargains in proportions but of appeal to the good sense and the better selves of the two great communities of India. When thus the nation's activities and attention are directed now to the preparation of men and munitions and now to war, or *vice-versa*, no one can speak of success or failure.

In Gandhi's judgment, the fight with Britain is essentially a moral fight; for the seven citadels constructed by the British are moral (or immoral) *prākārams* (or protection walls) round their central authority. These are the Services, the Legislatures, the Law Courts, the Colleges, the Local Bodies, the Commerce, and the Titled Aristocracy. Gandhi's programme of non-co-operation is simply aimed at destroying each of these in turn and all in the end. The triple boycott of Councils, Courts, and Colleges is a part of this plan. At one time there was even a call to the Services and the Army to give up their bondage. It was thus that the charm of British rule in India and its invincibility was broken.

IV. Gandhi and Satyāgraha

Satyāgraha in an age of violence and warfare is as strange a weapon as a steel knife in the Stone Age or the petrol engine in the midst of single bullock carts. People simply cannot understand it, do not believe in it, will not look at it. When Transvaal is quoted they brush it aside as an event that was possible on a small-scale, short-range fight—not applicable to a continent like India. Champaran, Kaira and Borsad are equally readily dismissed as essays in miniature which cannot be reproduced on a nation-wide scale. To-day all doubts have disappeared and all difficulties have dissolved. The problem is to keep Satyāgraha within the limits of *Satya* and its concomitant—*ahimsā*. Truth and non-violence which constitute the two component factors of the new technique are not passive, much less negative forces, they are positive, aggressive forces investing the programme with all the attributes of war on the violent plane. In confounding and demoralizing your enemies and ultimately conquering them by converting them, in engendering a rigid sense of discipline amongst its adherents, in working upon the mind and the emotion of the votaries of the new technique, in invoking courage, sacrifice and endurance, in mobilizing a nation-wide resistance with little capital and less of destructive armoury, Satyāgraha operates as a positive and irresistible force to whose efficacy experience has borne ample testimony.

Gandhiji's conception of *Truth* and non-violence is known to few. It has a double aspect in respect of both, one a positive and the other a negative. When the Collector of Champaran wrote to him a stiff letter which he later decided to withdraw and asked for its return, and when the young followers of Gandhi began to copy it, Gandhi admonished them and said that, if they kept a copy, the letter could not be said to have been withdrawn. That

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

was a new definition of Truth which was repeated during the Gandhi-Irwin pact when the Home Secretary, Mr. Emerson's insulting letter was, on second thoughts, withdrawn and we have not got a copy of it in the archives of the Congress—for the same reason that to keep a copy of a letter that is withdrawn is to harbour it, in your files as well as your breast, and that is untruth as well as anti-non-violence.

The subtlest incitement to violence is not tolerated by Gandhi. In the year 1921, when Gandhi agreed that the speeches of the Ali brothers lent themselves to such a misconstruction, he secured from them a statement repudiating any such intention on their part. But when the same Ali brothers were being prosecuted for their Karachi speech in October 1921, he repeated it in Trichinopoly and caused the whole of India to repeat the same from thousands of platforms. To him the one test is—is the speech non-violent through and through? If it is, his challenge is as ready as his apology, if it is not. As that is the view he takes of non-violence, he was shocked when, in the Civil Disobedience movement of November 1921, during the visit of the Prince of Wales, 53 people died and 400 were wounded! At this distance of time the five days' fast by way of penitence then undertaken by him appears as a trifle compared with his later fasts extending over 21 days and 28 days and his last "fast unto death."

Gandhi's non-co-operation has always been intended and embarked upon for co-operation, but he has never surrendered his first principles of Truth and Non-violence, as is borne out by his letter to Lord Reading dated February 1, 1922:

"But before the people of Bardoli actually commence mass Civil Disobedience, I would respectfully urge you as the head of the Government of India finally to revise your policy and set free all the non-co-operating prisoners v/o

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

are convicted or under trial for non-violent activities in the country, whether they be regarding the redress of the Khilafat or the Punjab wrongs or Swaraj or any other purpose, and even though they fall within the repressive sections of the Penal Code or the Criminal Procedure Code or other repressive laws, subject always to the condition of non-violence. I would further urge you to free the Press from all administrative control and restore all the fines and forfeitures recently imposed. In thus urging I am asking your Excellency to do what is to-day being done in every country which is deemed to be under civilized government. If you can see your way to make the necessary declaration within seven days of the date of publication of this manifesto, I shall be prepared to advise postponement of Civil Disobedience of an aggressive character till the imprisoned workers have after their discharge reviewed the whole situation and considered it *de novo*."

V. Gandhi—*His Inconsistencies*

Gandhi has been charged with the impracticability of his ideals by the moderates, with the moderation of his programme by the extremists, with inconsistencies of conduct by both; and in the midst of these conflicting assessments and appreciations of his life and work, he has stood unmoved like a rock and allowed the flow of praise and blame to pass him unaffected. The one guiding principle of his life is the verse in the Bhagavadgītā which says:

"Happiness and misery, Gain and Loss, victory and defeat—do thou treat them alike¹ and gird thyself for battle. Thus wilt thou not incur sin."¹

In 1896 Gandhi visited Poona and learnt his first lessons in politics at the feet of Tilak and Gokhale. The former appeared to him, he said, like the Himalayas—great and

¹ II, 38.

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

lofty, but unapproachable, while the latter appeared like the holy Ganges in which he could confidently take a plunge. In 1939 Gandhi has risen to the heights of Himavān but is easily accessible and has fathomed the depths of the Ganga and is ever purifying.

Few people understood what Satyāgraha was when it was crudely known by the name of Passive Resistance. It was defined by Gokhale as follows (in 1909):

"It is essentially défensive in nature and it fights with moral and spiritual weapons. A passive resister resists tyranny by undergoing suffering in his own person. He pits soul force against brute force; he pits the divine in man against the brute in man; he pits suffering against oppression; he pits conscience against might; he pits faith against injustice, right against wrong."

In 1939 Satyāgraha has become a household word and the universally acknowledged strategy of oppressed citizens whether of British India or of the Indian States and is warmly recommended to the Jews against the German pogroms and the Chinese against the Japanese inroads.

At Karachi in 1913 the Indian National Congress voted its admiration "for the heroic endeavours of Gandhi and his followers and their unparalleled sacrifice in their struggle in South Africa for the maintenance of the self-respect of India and the redress of Indian grievances." The resolution was passed by the unanimous vote of the House. And in 1931 at the forty-fifth session of the Congress held again at Karachi, Gandhi won the admiration of the nation for his heroic endeavours not on behalf of a handful of men in South Africa but on behalf of the whole nation of 350 millions whose emancipation was successfully inaugurated on the same vital and abiding principles of Satyāgraha.

In 1914 Gandhi was a loyal citizen of the British Empire and helped in recruiting for the Great War even as he

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

had organized Red Cross units in the Zulu Rebellion and the Boer War early in the twentieth century. His attitude however to war has veered round from one pole to the other. Though even so late as in August 1918 he had stood for unconditional help to the British in recruitment, still in September 1938 when the war clouds were lowering over Europe, he stood four square against any proposal to exploit the war situation for the benefit of India or to participate in the apprehended war in any measure. The two pictures may be studied in closer detail.

In 1919 Tilak was served with an order prohibiting him from lecturing without the previous permission of the District Magistrate. Only a week before, we are told he was engaged in a recruiting campaign and as a guarantee of good faith he had sent to Mahatma Gandhi a cheque for Rs. 50,000, the amount to be forfeited as penalty if certain conditions were not fulfilled by him. This was in the nature of a wager. The wager was that Tilak undertook to recruit five thousand persons from Maharashtra if Gandhi could secure a promise from Government beforehand that Indians would get commissioned ranks in the army. Gandhi's position was that the help should not be in the nature of a bargain and therefore he returned the cheque to Tilak.

In September 1938 the Working Committee of the Congress was sitting from day to day at Delhi to deal with the war situation in Europe. There were two schools of thought in the country—those who would negotiate India's rights with Britain and then agree to help her and those who would not help in the prosecution of a war under any conditions. Gandhi belonged to the latter group, and he was in 1938 as clearly against participation in war on any conditions as he was for helping Britain in 1918 unconditionally.

In 1918 Gandhi was engaged in a multiplicity of activities

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

of which the most notable was directed against the Rowlatt Bills. To-day he is engaged in fighting against similar laws operating with full force and vigour in the various States of India—Travancore, Jaipur, Rajkot-Limbdi, Dhenkanal and so on. No better testimony can be cited to his plan and purpose than was placed on record by the author of *India* (1919)—a Government of India publication:

"Mr. Gandhi is generally considered a Tolstoyan of high ideals and complete selflessness. Since his stand on behalf of the Indians in South Africa, he has commanded among his countrymen all the traditional reverence with which the East envelops a religious leader of acknowledged asceticism. In his case he possesses the added strength that his admirers are not confined to any religious sect. Since he took up his residence in Ahmedabad, he has been actively concerned in social work of varied kinds.

"His readiness to take up the cudgels on behalf of any individual or class whom he regards as being oppressed has endeared him to the masses of his countrymen. In the case of urban and rural population of many parts of the Bombay Presidency his influence is unquestioned, and he is regarded with a reverence for which adoration is scarcely too strong a word. Believing as he does in the superiority of 'Soul Force' over material might, Mr. Gandhi was led to believe that it was his duty to employ against the Rowlatt Act that weapon of Passive Resistance which he had used effectively in South Africa. It was announced on the 24th February that he would lead a Passive Resistance or Satyagraha movement if the Bills were passed. This announcement was regarded as being of the utmost gravity both by Government and by many of the Indian politicians. Some moderate members of the Indian Legislative Council publicly affirmed their apprehension as to the consequences of such a step. Mrs. Besant, with her remarkable knowledge of the psychology of the Indian temperament, warned

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

Mr. Gandhi in the most solemn manner that any such movement as he contemplated would result in the release of forces whose potentialities for evil were quite incalculable. It must be clearly stated that there was nothing in Mr. Gandhi's attitude or pronouncements which could have justified Government taking any steps against him before the inception of the movement. Passive Resistance is a negative and not a positive process. Mr. Gandhi expressly condemned any resort to material force. He was confident that he would be able by a process of passive disobedience of Civil Laws to coerce the Government into abandoning the Rowlatt Act. On the 18th March he published a pledge regarding the Rowlatt Bills which ran as follows: 'Being conscientiously of opinion that the Bill known as the Indian Criminal Law Amendment Bill No. 1 of 1919 and the Criminal Law Emergency Powers Bill No. 2, 1919, are unjust, subversive of the principles of liberty and justice and destructive of the elementary rights of an individual on which the safety of India as a whole and the State itself is based, we solemnly affirm that in the event of these Bills becoming Law and until they are withdrawn, we shall refuse civilly to obey these Laws and such other laws as the Committee hereafter to be appointed may think fit, and we further affirm that in the struggle we will faithfully follow truth and refrain from violence to life, person and property.'

In 1919 (July 21st) Gandhi accepted the advice of Government and friends and suspended Civil Disobedience and in 1934 (April) again he had occasion to suspend Civil Disobedience except in his own person. "I have been accused of throwing a lighted match," said he in 1919. "If my occasional resistance be a lighted match, the Rowlatt Legislation and the persistence in retaining it on the Statute Book is a thousand matches scattered throughout India. The only way to avoid civil resistance altogether

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

is to withdraw that legislation." In 1934 in his Patna statement, dated April 7th, he said on the eve of suspending Civil Disobedience once again:

"I feel that the masses have not received the full message of Satyāgraha owing to its adulteration in the process of transmission. It has become clear to me that spiritual instruments suffer in their potency when their use is taught through non-spiritual media. Spiritual messages are self-propagating.

"I must advise all Congressmen to suspend civil resistance for Swaraj as distinguished from specific grievances. They should leave it to me alone. It should be resumed by others in my life-time only under my direction, unless one arises claiming to know the science better than I do and inspires confidence. I give this opinion as the author and initiator of Satyāgraha. Henceforth, therefore, all who have been impelled to civil resistance for Swaraj under my advice directly given or indirectly inferred will please desist from civil resistance. I am quite convinced that this is the best course in the interests of India's fight for freedom.

"I am in deadly earnest about this greatest of weapons at the disposal of mankind."

In 1934 in the same Patna statement he bemoaned that "the indifferent civil resistance of many, grand as it has been in its results, has not touched the hearts either of the terrorists or the rulers as a class." But to-day he has the satisfaction of over 2,500 of these friends having been released from internment and avowed their faith in non-violence, while as a crowning piece of the victory of non-violence over violence, Sardar Pridhwi Singh, who was taken for dead, while really he had been moving freely between India and Europe for over seventeen years, after jumping out of a running train while in custody and transfer, delivered himself into the hands of Gandhi who

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

in turn committed him to the care of the British jails in India and is striving hard for his release.

After the suspension of Civil Disobedience in 1919 Gandhi knowing the happenings in the Punjab was doubtless greatly shocked by the unexpected turn events had taken and admitted that "he had made a 'blunder of Himalayan dimensions' which had enabled ill-disposed persons, not true passive resisters at all, to perpetrate disorders."

When the Reform Act of 1919 was enacted, Gandhi advocated the view that, despite the unsatisfactory and inadequate nature of the reforms, the Congress, responding to the sentiments in the Royal Proclamation, should express the "trust that both the authorities and the people will co-operate so to work the reforms as to secure the establishment of Responsible Government." Compare with this his attitude in 1937 asking for assurances from the Government regarding the non-uses of the special powers and the non-interference by the Governors in the day-to-day administration of the Provinces and the enforced implementing of the same by Government in the matter of the release of political prisoners accused of violence, of the appointment of the Governor of Orissa and the drastic revision of the Zamindari and Land Revenue Laws of the country and the return of the confiscated lands to the peasantry of Bardoli.

At the Amritsar Congress, Gandhi pleaded "for the return of the madness of the Government with sanity but not to return madness with madness." To-day he assures the country that in Rajkot and in the States where Government are going mad, once again success will be the people's, if only they observe non-violence and return madness with sanity.

Gandhi's passage from the wholly humanitarian to the purely political field was imperceptible and even involuntary—not that he was not aware of it, but he could not

resist it; and when he joined the All India Home Rule League and became its President he felt a call to duty on his terms. Those terms, he said, were "strict adherence to truth and non-violence in the promotion of the causes in which he had specialized, namely Swadeshi Communal unity, Hindustani as the lingua franca and a linguistic redistribution of the Provinces." The reforms were to him secondary. From social service to politics was then an easy glide to him, through the passage of religion. To-day he reverts to social service from politics through the same passage. Indeed to him both are the same, as they constitute but the two sides of a coin, the medal itself being composed of the sterling material of *Satya* and *ahimsā* which form the basal principles of all religions.

To Gandhi non-co-operation is not an end in itself but is a means to an end. His outstretched hand of co-operation is always open to the grasp of his opponent provided national honour is not imperilled. That was his position in 1920 and that is his position to-day. In 1920 it was spurned, in 1939 it is warmly sought after by Government.

Another study in contrasts is furnished by Gandhi's attitude towards complete Independence in 1921 and 1929. In 1921 he stated at Ahmedabad:

"The levity with which the proposition has been taken by some of you has grieved me. It has grieved me because it shows lack of responsibility. As responsible men and women we should go back to the days of Nagpur and Calcutta."

In 1928 when the question of Independence was once again brought to the fore, Gandhi made the following characteristic observation:

"You may take the name of Independence on your lips as the Muslims utter the name of Allah or the pious Hindu utters the name of Krishna or Rama, but all that muttering will be empty formula if there is no honour behind it. If

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

you are not prepared to stand by your own words where will Independence be? Independence is a thing, after all, made of sterner stuff. It is not made by the juggling of words."

And in 1929 he closed his conversations with Lord Irwin, on December 23rd, with the virtual challenge that he would organize the nation for complete Independence.

In 1920 Government expressed their trust and belief that "the sanity of the classes and masses alike would reject non-co-operation as a visionary and chimerical scheme, which if successful could only result in widespread disorder, political chaos and ruin of all those who have any real stake in the country." "The appeal of non-co-operation is to prejudice and ignorance," they said, "and its creed is devoid of any constructive germs." To-day the very Government are anxious to negotiate a treaty with the founder of the movement and the residual legatee of its best asset, namely Civil Disobedience.

In 1921 when Lord Reading opened negotiations with Gandhi—and they failed owing to a slight mishance in that Gandhi's telegram reached Lord Reading in Calcutta a little late—every one thought that Gandhi was an impracticable man, yea, an impossible man, but when Lord Irwin releasing him and his twenty-six comrades from jail opened negotiations with him in 1931, a decade later, everybody praised him for his qualities of give and take, for his sense of proportion, propriety and perspective—qualities equally in evidence and equally effective in the gentle negotiations between Gandhi and Lord Linlithgow in June 1937 which resulted in office acceptance by the Congress.

In 1922 the Chauri Chaura tragedy in which twenty-one constables and a sub-inspector were burnt alive, and with them the police station where they were penned, made Gandhi go back upon the whole programme of Civil Disobedience, while in 1939 the murder of Bazellette in

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

Ranpur (Orissa) has compelled him to tender the same advice to the people of the States of the Eastern Agency in Orissa. Prestige has never stood in the way of the paramountcy of non-violence. On Gandhi's release in 1924 he made a declaration in the course of which he observed that he "retained his opinion that Council entry is inconsistent with non-co-operation." Yet it was he who in 1934 endorsed council entry when Civil Disobedience was suspended and worked it up to its logical conclusion of office acceptance under conditions, which have enabled the Ministers to work the Reform Act not as the British would have them do but as the nation would desire and demand.

In 1934 in his famous Patna statement, April 7th, he referred to the States and declared that "the Policy advocated by some in regard to the States was wholly in difference from what I have advised. I have given many an anxious hour to the question but I have not been able to alter my view."

In 1939 he has altered his view altogether only because the conditions in the States have entirely changed. The new awakening amongst them has roused his sympathies to the point of inducing him to offer his utmost support to the cause of the States' people, so that to-day Mrs. Gandhi is in jail in Rajkot and Gandhi has said that the Princes must either confer on their people responsible government of the States or undergo extinction.

VI. *Gandhi—His Instinct*

Truth and non-violence are higher experiences of man which require a trained sensibility to appreciate them even as music and mathematics or Khaddar fabrics and communal unity. Trained sensibilities develop direct intuitions, and Gandhi always judges by intuition and not by reason.

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

It is the attribute of virtue to perceive truth instinctively. So does this embodiment of virtue, while those who follow in his footsteps have the duty laid upon them of being the exponents and interpreters of his teachings in terms of the ethical laws and the social conventions of their age and clime. It was thus that he decided upon the great resile at Bardoli in 1922, upon Salt Satyagraha in 1930, upon the suspension of the Civil Disobedience movement in 1934, and on the States' policy in 1939. Light dawns upon him suddenly. Oftentimes did he say that he saw no light and was praying for it. And when he sees the light it appears strange to his people, for his remedies are unprecedented and awe inspiring. When a madman disturbs a meeting of the A.I.C.C. he stops the volunteers trying to remove him bodily and asks the whole house of three hundred members to adjourn. The disturber is paralysed. When a municipality is imposed upon the people of Chirala-Perala by force, and against the people's will, his remedy is that they should quit the place; and quit they did like the Tartars of old who revolted against Zebech Dorchi. In the No-tax campaign of Bardoli and Chersada, the peasants were asked to leave their homes and hearths and migrate to the neighbouring State of Baroda, thus making the puissant British Government with their mighty cohorts *hors de combat*. When the people of the Nilgiri State in Orissa have been oppressed by their Prince, an exodus is the ready and ancient remedy prescribed and followed to bring round an erring ruler to his senses. The success in these cases depends upon the endurance of the people as well as their purity of heart. Gandhi's following, however, does not always see eye to eye with him. They often resisted his decisions. They stoutly opposed the Bardoli resile in 1922 (February) and praised the spirit behind the crimes of anarchy. When the Serajgung resolution was once again voted upon at Ahmedabad at the All

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

Parties' Conference in the autumn of 1924, *Gandhi wept* in the open meeting; he wept because some of his own devout followers voted on the side of praising the young man who had committed the crime.

Gandhi's habit is to play with fire—yet he always emerges unscathed from this risky game. He has been arrested several times. Every time the ordeal of fire has burnished the metal of his frame. He expressed regret times without number over the madness of his people, and insisted on the Congress doing so as well. He has agreed to the postponement of his cherished schemes of mass Civil Disobedience time after time merely because violence broke out at some place or other, however remote it might be.

Gandhi works more effectively upon the country when he is silent than when he talks, when he is out of the Congress than when he is in. People may have forgotten the fact that at Cawnpore in the year 1925 he took a vow of political silence which he broke at Gauhati in December 1926. But to him such periods of silence, physical or political, are periods of incubation when huge plans mature in his mind and are, after full gestation, given birth to as well-thought-out programmes and formulae. One such long interval was the period between the Cawnpore Session (1925) and the Calcutta Session of 1928 which were followed by the Lahore (1929) challenge on the ticket of complete Independence. Gandhi resists his own following and tries their mettle as much as he does his opponents'. If they stand his test, he takes up their ideas and makes them his own. If they fail they go by the board. It was thus that he dealt with the problem of Civil Disobedience first, then of Complete Independence and finally of the States. To-day he is vehement on the question of the States much to the surprise of his colleagues and the chagrin of his opponents. The younger Congressmen sus-

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

pect his *bona fides* and have publicly charged him with being engaged in making a compromise with the British on Federation. They loudly proclaim their determination to destroy the edifice of Federation which is a two-storeyed structure. The youth direct their guns at the top storey. Gandhi is already pulling down the first floor and pillars thereof. These pillars are the States without which there is no Federation, and the Provincial apartments of the ground floor are threatening to collapse since the pillars that support the top floor are fast crumbling. Gandhi's strategy is truth. His armoury is non-violence. He means what he says and does what he means. When he declared at the Second Round Table Conference that he would "*fight with his life*" the dismemberment of the Hindu Community by Government fixing separate electorates for Harijans, he meant it. He confirmed it on the Azad Maidan on his return from England (December 28, 1931). He committed it to writing in March 1932 in a letter to Sir Samuel Hoare and he began his "fast to death" on September 20, 1932. To-day he is taking another fateful vow on the question of the States and he will break Federation. "What is more, if God so wills it, I feel I have enough strength and energy in me to lead a battle much more strenuous than any I have fought." Gandhi's life and career furnish a study in contrasts, which are but seeming and imaginary, being the necessary attributes of a character deeply religious and intensely practical. To combine the ideal with the real, daring with caution, the spirit of revolution with a sense of conservatism, a dash for the future with a bias for the past, the fulfilment of nationalism with the preparation of the nation for universal humanity,—in one word to reconcile liberty with fraternity, and evolve from both humanity, is to tack on the brake to the engine in a well-formed train and run it on its rails with its stops and starts, with its steady ascents and rapid

B. PATTABHISITARAMAYYA

descents, with its level and linear movements and its uneven and gradient curves. India has the glory of being led by one who is a man amongst men and yet, what is a puzzle to the contemporary world, has developed into a miracle, a frail being who is a real phenomenon, a Sthithaprajña, yea, an avatār, one who has elevated politics to the sublimity of a religion, charged the conflicts of society with a high ethical and humanitarian touch, and strives to hasten the advent of that far off Divine event, the Parliament of Man and the Federation of the World.

GANDHI'S MESSAGE TO THE WHOLE
WORLD

by Miss MAUDE D. PETRE
(Storrington, Sussex, England)

I, an Englishwoman, am about to speak a few words on the career of one who has not spared the character and conduct of my own land; who has, to a large extent, lived and worked in opposition to her.

And yet, when I was offered the opportunity of adding my contribution to this volume I embraced it fearlessly, for I knew that, if Mahatma Gandhi had devoted his life to the cause of his own people, he had also stood for a wider cause, a more far-reaching cause, the cause of humanity itself. And thus I felt that, essentially, he had worked for the ideals of every country that is conscious of the part it has to play in the destiny of the world at large as well as in the conduct of its own affairs. For, like the individual, every nation has a twofold vocation: the

MISS MAUDE D. PETRE

call to live its own life and direct its own affairs to the best for its own welfare, and the call to live its life as an organ of the great community of all nations and all mankind.

Now it is because the Mahatma has been a prophet and leader in this second and greater vocation of every human soul and every human society that the purely political side of his career seems to me relatively unimportant; and that I can venture to concentrate, as, I believe, posterity will concentrate, on the lesson he has persistently inculcated of human disinterestedness and universal charity.

As he himself has said:

*"If I seem to take part in politics it is only because politics to-day encircle us like the coils of a snake from which one cannot get out no matter how one tries. I wish to wrestle with the snake . . . I am trying to introduce religion into politics."*¹

Now what is to be expected of a life whose main direction is the moral regeneration of human society as a whole; the metamorphosis of selfishness, rivalry and cruelty into mutual forbearance and fraternal co-operation? The expectation of wise men in such case is an expectation of disappointment, of humiliation, of failure. And I venture to say that we have in Gandhi an example of heroic failure in spite of all that he may have achieved. Reformers must ever be prepared to leave their bodies by the wayside, for like Moses, they may see the land of promise, but not enter.

"I have caused thee to see it with thine eyes, but thou shalt not go over thither."

For, in Gandhi's own words, "a reformer's business is to make the impossible possible, by giving an ocular demonstration in his own conduct"; and when he thinks of his own " littleness and limitations," he is "dazed."²

For, once great spiritual aims become the objects of

¹ Quoted in *Mahatma Gandhi*, R. Rolland. (George Allen & Unwin).

² See *Young India*.

concrete work and effort, the perennial struggle of body and spirit comes into play; the purity of spiritual effort is tarnished; the aim is blurred and obscured; the prophet is dragged down into the arena of human passion; his wisest measures are executed by the unwise, his purest efforts get tainted, in the course of fulfilment, by human passion and selfishness.

Yes, it has been a losing battle, but one whose losses in their final sum are, like the stones rejected of the builder, the corner stones of a new Jerusalem. Moses did not enter the promised land, but he saw it, and the land was there; his own presence or absence therefrom did not affect the future of Israel; others would sit down in peace within the borders in front of which he died.

And so it seems to me that, in enumerating the chief efforts of this life, we are also enumerating its chief failures; failure inevitable, but failure also fruitful.

Here are some of the battles in which he has been worsted, but the lesson of whose story will outlive the defeat.

First of all, the battle with the machine, against which he advanced, armed with no sword or gun, but with the spinning-wheel. A pathetic effort indeed; as many of his own followers told him. An effort doomed to failure. And yet the spinning-wheel has hummed a word of truth; of soul-searching truth, that only too many of us have long and sadly recognized.

The machine has exercised a de-humanizing influence on life; it has got the better of us; and all the hand-spinning of India will "not avail to conquer it. But the hand-spinning of India may avail to make us realize our servitude; and the call to a simpler and more human life may, at last, rouse men to assert their own primacy; to reduce the monster to his rightful dimensions; to make it the servant and not the master of the human soul; to

hold it in check and deny even its temporary material advantages when they run directly counter to the true welfare of body and soul.

A second battle against cruelty to man and beast. And here he has had to contend with his own people at least as much as with others. He has urged man "to look beyond his own species, and realize his identity with all that lives."

And, while he has upheld the doctrine of the sacredness of life, his heart has bled over the sufferings of dumb creatures that were not, indeed, slaughtered, but that were, indeed, neglected.

The third and greatest battle has been against the spirit of domination and violence, and he has gone forth, even more totally disarmed than David, against the Goliath of human force and passion, for he has carried but one weapon, that of non-violence.

He has been worsted again and again; not only by his foes, but, what is more bitter, by his friends. And he has come up hard against the unsolved pacifist problem, of how the non-violent are to survive in a world of violence; of how non-violence itself is to survive in a world wherein violence predominates.

Let anyone run through the pages of *Young India* if they would realize the persistent problems that have beset the Mahatma's career.

And it is on this point that the Mahatma best shows forth the triumph of failure. For he maintains that the doctrine has never really been put into practice.

"Try it," he says, "for we can never truly estimate the strength of the soul until we have ceased to defend it by bodily means.

"I seek entirely to blunt the edge of the tyrant's sword, not by putting up against it a sharper edged weapon, but by disappointing his expectation that I would be offering physical resistance. The resistance of the soul that I should offer instead would

MISS MAUDE D. PETRE

*elude him. It would at first dazzle him and at last compel recognition, which recognition would not humiliate, but would uplift him. It may be urged that this is an ideal state. And so it is."*¹

Here we have faith coupled with open-eyed recognition of failure; of belief in the policy proposed coupled with certainty that the moment has not yet come, even if it be coming, for its perfect fulfilment.

Are we then to regret, as one great poet regretted, that Gandhi has brought his teaching and ideals into the arena of human life and passion in such fashion as to manifest their present, at least partial, failure? Yes, and No!

Yes, because one hates to be convinced of the bankruptcy of some of the noblest human ideals.

Yes, because one hates to see a prophet dragged about in the *mélée*, not living above it as some have done.

No, because the very brutality of the contest has forced men to open their eyes to ideals which might otherwise have been preserved, in calm dignity, but only in the minds of a thinking minority. The Jews had to look on the face of Christ before they struck it; and men must listen to the message of meekness and charity before they can deny it.

We cannot fight without receiving scars; nor can we even fight without, in our turn, striking where blows were unmerited. And so there has been both good and evil in the Mahatma's political struggle.

But through the hubbub of passing rivalries and dissensions has sounded the human message, the message to all mankind. A message to both East and West, a Hindu message, but mostly uttered in the language of Christianity.

And this is why I dare, with humble apologies, to neglect all that is local and purely national in the policy of Mahatma Gandhi, and to appropriate his person and

¹ See *Young India*, October 8, 1925.

MISS MAUDE D. PETRE

mission in the name of my own and all countries of the world.

THE WISDOM OF GANDHIJI

by Hy. S. L. POLAK
(London) ^

It is not by chance that Gandhiji was included, some years ago, in a series of addresses at the Guildhouse, during Dr. Maude Royden's ministry, on "Makers of Modern Thought." When the time comes to assess the great men of to-day and to discuss their contribution to the world's thought and practice, probably no name will stand out more significantly and constructively than that of India's foremost leader.

There are other leaders in the world whose names are more frequently on men's lips. They are leaders, not of life, but of death; they are leaders towards the abyss and not towards the heights; they are leaders of hate and of violence, not of love and of non-violence; they are leaders back to barbarism, not forward to the nobler civilization; they are leaders of a doctrine of "superiority" of race, raised to the rank of a false divinity, not of the fellowship of man within the Fatherhood of God.

But who, looking back into the mists of history, absorbing its lessons and watching its results, can doubt that, in the long run, it is Gandhiji's teaching of *Ahimsā* that will triumph and not the resort to violence of these new Caesars? His conquests are in the realm of the spirit, sowing the seed of the regeneration of mankind; theirs are in the world of matter, and their paths are strewn with blood and tears. He would win his opponent by

self-suffering; they would add to human suffering by the remorseless destruction of whatever and whoever stands in their way.

Many years ago Gandhiji said to me: "Men say that I am a saint losing himself in politics. The fact is that I am a politician trying my hardest to become a saint." That is a humble, homely and modern confession of human imperfection seeking to evolve, positively and by self-discipline, towards the higher levels of perfection. It explains the faults of action and the errors of judgment that he has repeatedly admitted during his fifty years' pilgrimage as a "Truth-seeker." One need not agree either with his interpretation of a situation or of the best method of dealing with it to recognize that he has never failed in his steady insistence that "There is no Religion higher than Truth." To hold the vision steady, to keep the faith—what more can one demand of a man? If he should at times stumble and falter—what are these but human experiences on the Path? And Gandhiji asks us to believe that he recognizes them as warning signs, so that he may retrace his steps, and march the more unerringly towards the Goal that he has marked out for himself.

In the course of his pilgrimage he has learnt many lessons, and he has acquired a store of practical knowledge that is the common treasure of all who pass along the same road. Mere mumbling of *mantras* has no attraction for him; they must have a meaning adaptable to the ordinary activities of human life and need. Moreover, they must, in his view, be universally applicable, or they are substantially untrue. We need, therefore, not be surprised to read the following interpretation of his doctrine of *Ahimsā* as a practical rule of life:

"If one does not practise non-violence (which, elsewhere, Gandhiji speaks of as the "maturest fruit" of Truth) in one's personal relations with others, and hopes to use

it in bigger affairs, one is vastly mistaken. Non-violence, like charity, must begin in the home. And if it is necessary for the individual to be trained in non-violence, it is even more necessary for the nation to be trained likewise. One cannot be non-violent in one's own circle and be violent outside it. Or else, one is not truly non-violent even in one's own circle; often the non-violence is only in appearance. It is only when you meet with resistance . . . that your non-violence is put on its trial. . . . Living among decent people your conduct may not be described as non-violent. Mutual forbearance is non-violence. Immediately, therefore, you get the conviction that non-violence is the law of life, you have to practise it to those who act violently towards you, and the law must apply to nations as to individuals. Training is, no doubt, necessary. And beginnings are always small. But if the conviction is there, the rest will follow." All of which is but an old saying of his—"Fix your standards right; sooner or later you will attain to them"—writ large.

A teaching of this kind—ancient in India (and in Palestine)—must sound sheer madness to the Dictators whose power-politics are menacing our world with the destruction of the noble things that it cherishes, sheer madness to the terrified victims of violence and cruelty and to those threatened by the ruthlessness and greed of modern conquest. Yet, may it not be that Gandhiji and his spiritual forebears, who taught that Hate is conquered by Love, that man should love his neighbour as himself, that we are all members one of another, are right? and that in this world of rapid communication and swift transport, of growing interchange of thought and recognition of mutual interdependence, the only chance of the survival of man and of the higher values is to put into practice this ancient teaching voiced in modern language by this new prophet?

Whilst others are described as "leader," it is not for

nothing that Gandhiji (much to his regret) has been given the title of "Mahatma." It was a great soul who, thirty years ago, wrote with insight: "Soul-force is matchless. It is superior to the force of arms. How, then, can it be considered merely as a weapon of the weak? Men who use physical force are strangers to the courage that is requisite in a passive resister ("Satyāgrahi"). . . . Who is the true warrior—he who keeps death always as a bosom-friend? . . . Control over the mind is alone necessary, and when that is attained, man is free . . . and his very glance withers the enemy." No wonder, then, that he declares positively and unhesitatingly: "My confidence is unshaken, that if a single Satyāgrahi holds out to the end, victory is absolutely certain."

Nowadays, sabre-rattlers shout orders to the world through microphones and punctuate their commands with the dropping of bombs or the spraying of poison-gas. They brag of their victories over other nations and strut among the ruins of freedom. The people are at the same time the instruments of their pride and the victims of their violence. How different from the mild accents, the emphasis upon man's spiritual powers, the recalling of the ancient message of peace, and love, and brotherhood, by this Indian teacher of to-day. As ever, the message of a new age is given to us from the East. Have we the wit to listen and the wisdom to learn? Gandhiji does not pretend to originality. In his *Autobiography* he recalls: "The sage who realized Truth found non-violence out of the violence raging all about him, and said: 'Violence is unreal; non-violence is real.'

It is once more the fashion among the younger folk, as it was a generation or so ago, to mock at religion and to reject it as a superstitious remnant of human ignorance and folly, if not something baser still. I have no doubt that in India, too, the same false philosophy is abroad and that many young men and women are trying to "throw

away the baby with the bath-water," to use a homely Western phrase.

They would do well to ponder over the sayings of their great sages and to seek to discover anew the true meaning of the ancient lore. But if they are unwilling to learn from the wisdom of the past, let them at least heed the wisdom of their own great national leader, when he says authoritatively:

"Religion is a thing not alien to us: it has to be evolved out of us. It is always within us; with some, consciously so, with others quite unconsciously. But it is always there. And whether we wake up this religious instinct in us through outside assistance or by inward growth, no matter how it is done, it has got to be done, if we want to do anything in the right manner, or to achieve anything that is going to persist."

So, too, he tells us that "*Ahimsā*" is the soul of Truth and that non-violence is the highest religion. And he adds—whether we can believe it or not—"If you express your love—*Ahimsā*—in such a manner that it impresses itself indelibly upon your so-called enemy, he must return that love."

It is good to live in a time that has produced another great "lover of mankind," following so soon after Tolstoy. How the sages and saints, the prophets and devotees, major or minor, do purify the atmosphere and spread light "amid th' encircling gloom"! What should we do without these spiritual "sweepers," who help us, from age to age and from generation to generation, to cleanse our souls, so that we may realize anew our Divine nature and, encouraged once more to enlarge our capacity for endeavour, climb with resolute courage the heights that still remain for us to tread?

In one of Olive Schreiner's prose-poems, she pictures the adventures of the seeker after the "bird of Truth," of

which he had once had a vision, and she leaves us with him, dying on a mountain-top, clasping to his breast one feather that had fallen from the bird. The message that Gandhiji, in his seventieth year, leaves with us may well be such a feather, and we shall be fortunate indeed if, at our own death, we have clasped it to our bosom and made it our own.

THE TRIUMPH OF THE SPIRIT

*by LLEWFLYN POWYS
(Clavadel, Davos Platz,
Switzerland)*

A confirmed rationalist and lover of earth life, it is no easy task for me lucidly to present the ideas suggested by the appearance of such an extraordinary being as Mahatma Gandhi. It is clear that his presence amongst us offers a difficult challenge to explain away. In our handy-dandy-market-place world we feel the irresistible attraction of the man. The mere sight of his picture in any of the daily papers ruffles our customary soul sloth as he peers out from the common commercial page with a look of pure wisdom. I have been told that there exist in certain parts of China white bats, and the photographs of this rare man seem scarcely less strange than do the faces of such unusual creatures, equipped as he is with eyes that seem to penetrate deep into life's darkest secrets, and with ears that by their generous habit testify to an essential sweetness of nature such as is seldom to be met with either in the Orient or in the Occident. No human being in our time has more successfully vindicated the power of love, not, be it understood, the natural love of vineyard and corn-

land, but the ideal love of the mystics, of the Christian and of the Hindu, a love that goes clean contrary to our animal inheritance. To people sceptical of supernatural rumours much of Mr. Gandhi's thought cannot fail to be meaningless, made up as it seems of the veriest illusions, or often enough of trite moral preconceptions whose roots, when closely examined, are seen to go not much deeper than those inculcated everywhere by priests eager to find divine sanctions for the more serviceable contracts of society. Not for nothing as a young man was this serpent-phobe to be found at prayer meetings and hymn-singing parties in England and South Africa, as well as in India. But if his head appears often easily turned by the airs of heaven it is otherwise with his heart which remains always sane, sunny, humane, and honourable.

To read the autobiography of Mr. Gandhi is truly a revelation as to the triumph of the spirit over the body. Somewhere he tells us that he has always striven to attain "fineness and rarity of spirit." How narrow are the horns of the dilemmas upon which he balances, like one of the Schoolmen's angels poised upon the point of a bodkin! Quaint enough to a free mind are the conundrums that keep entering into this pious head so much to be revered. Gandhi takes a pledge not to drink of the milk of the cow, and then is full of scruples when he sips a little goat's milk, lest this beverage might have been included in his original vow. He sees a calf suffering from an incurable malady—is he justified in killing it out of compassion? How were the monkeys—"those wily and intelligent cousins of ours"—to be kept away from the cultivated grounds of the peasants without violence? It will be noticed that these nice problems may be associated with the Hindu doctrine of cow worship, a doctrine which for Mr. Gandhi has the widest possible significance, nothing less, in fact, than the religious recognition by the human

race of a moral obligation to shelter and protect, and never to kill, other creatures that breathe upon the earth's surface, however unassuming and lowly. Mr. Gandhi's ethical sensibility may be exacting, but it is also very sure, and never does he condemn the gross turpitude of the West with more passion than when he has occasion to refer to vivisection, that dark abomination still palliated by Governments that are sentimental as they are cynical, and morally blind as they are lacking in magnanimity.

The treatment that this "well-descended spirit" has so often received at the hands of Europeans must remain a matter for the heaviest shame. Insulted and buffeted, threatened and beaten, and on one occasion nearly lynched by a white mob in Durban, he has not been embittered but has merely continued following his fairy fancies with dedicated, resolute steps. How comes it that this little body, this habitation of brittle bones, can house so mighty a spirit? The applause of the noisy world seems to affect him as little as does its hatred. His personal dignity is of a kind so supreme that he can suffer the most mortifying physical indignities and remain unviolated and inviolable. Harried here and there, now being pulled through the window of a crowded train, now bending his spine to sweep up the dung of indentured labourers, now serving "Untouchables" as though they were of his nearest kin, his perfect simplicity and perfect goodness appear utterly unaffected. It is impossible to associate him with the sort of spiritual vanity that so infects our own idealists, whether secular or clerical. His genius is free as a cloud and he will change notion or custom over-night if he hears a true word. This Ariel breaks asunder all chains save those placed on his heels by the great Prospero of his life-long allegiance. Mr. Gandhi, for all his high principles and high thoughts, possesses a remarkable store of practical good sense. It is this, combined with an utter selflessness in all his approaches

LLEWELYN POWYS

to life, which has rendered him so invincible in his various struggles against wrong-doing and oppression. Wherever he goes all falls before him, as though his brown spinning hand held between finger and thumb a goblin's wand.

If ever the secret of Jesus has been practically proven, it has been so by this saintly Hindu. This is perhaps why the words of Jesus are so often upon his lips though he is far too clear a thinker, and has a far too honest mind, to accept the dogmas and theological inventions of our Western faith. "My reason was not ready to believe literally that Jesus by his death and by his blood redeemed the sins of the world. Metaphorically there might be some truth in it." He was always strongly attracted to the Christian ideal of self-sacrifice, and the Sermon on the Mount, with all its manifold implications, made a deep impression on him. Nietzsche uttered once the piercing paradox, "There has been only one Christian and he died on the cross." Perhaps if the frenzied philosopher had lived long enough to observe the manner of life of this other Guru he would have qualified his celebrated quip.

With a noble tenderness and devotion Gandhi cared for the sick and wounded in that unforgivable "man hunt" known as the Zulu Rebellion, and as he marched through "those solemn solitudes" of the African Hinterland, he decided, he tells us, to observe the vow of Brahmacharya. Did not Jesus also turn away from his family believing like Gandhi that "he who would be a friend with God must remain alone"? Listen, too, to the following rash pronouncement: "God helps us when we feel ourselves humbler than the

— under our feet. Only to the weak and helpless is he succour vouchsafed."

It is difficult to foresee the influences that will shape our man destiny here in earth. Perhaps, "metaphorically speaking," these two heroes, so sinless and so sin-obsessed, have fallen upon an unexpected clue by which "the old

LLEWELYN POWYS

Dragon underground" may be bound in straiter limits. If it is found that happiness, as in the golden age, can be charmed back to earth by the gentle persuasions of their magical manners, blessed will it be indeed for the race of turbulent mortals so long abused. It is impossible not to respond to the story of Mr. Gandhi's four Indian clerks who, when they were asked whether they would come with him to nurse men stricken with the plague, with the terrible black death, answered simply, "Where you go we will go also."

If Gandhi's inspired gentleness gives to us English contrite and broken hearts for the horrible atrocity—"a monstrous progeny of a monstrous war"—committed by General Dyer at Amritsar, he will have done a most valuable service for our native land. He will have proved once again that **FEAR** does not rule the world and that there is a power greater than the bloody triumph of the sword.

Ha! Monsieur Maggot and my Lord Rat,
Here's something for you to squinny at!
We pine and pine—but by Holy Rood
There's something here not understood
And we are not the Devil's food.

How can we suffer the good name of our island race to be dragged down, down to the dust, "through the brute and boist'rous force of violent men!" Gandhi, with the eyeballs of the God Siva, sees through the frivolity of our Western culture, with its confidence in machines, with its lust for gold, with its lust for power, with its thoughtless acceptance of life's more trivial and more obvious values; with its reciprocity with nature acquired through killing innocent wild creatures—a culture that knows nothing of meditation, a culture that prompts us to reduce to the level of the humdrum all the poetry that surrounds us, common as the grass of the field.

LLEWELYN POWYS

At Chauri Chaura in 1922 there occurred upon the Indian side a shameless example of mob violence. Gandhi at once stopped his movement of civil disobedience and imposed upon himself an arduous fast. This conduct was typical of the Mahatma, typical of the great soul. In *Piers Plowman*, the sturdy little religious political book of the fourteenth century, there occurs a sentence which I have for long regarded as one of the most beautiful to be found in our literature. I think it can be placed with propriety at the end of this faltering appreciation. "Never lighter was a leaf upon a linden tree, than thy love was when it took flesh and blood of man, fluttering, piercing as a needle-point."

HOMAGE FROM CHINA

by M. QUO TAI-CHI
(Chinese Ambassador,
London)

The processes of social and political regeneration all over China in our own times work in all the countries of Asia; and to serve and direct these processes a surprising group of leaders has been vouchsafed. Two of them have supremely embodied the greatest need of our continent, that moral prestige shall ever dominate high political acumen, whatever the diverse ways by which national regenerations are being worked out. As a devoted follower of Sun Yat-sen I count it a privilege to offer my word of homage to Mahatma Gandhi on the occasion of his seventieth birthday.

SIR ABDUL QADIR

A STATESMAN IN BEGGAR'S GARB

by SIR ABDUL QADIR

(Adviser to the Secretary of State
for India)

Some years ago I was on a visit to Vienna—the old, gay Vienna before the Anschluss. I went to one of its big restaurants for my mid-day meal. It was a busy hour and the place was crowded. I had some difficulty in finding a vacant table. A waiter came to me, and instead of asking what I required, he said:

"Do you come from the country of Gandhi?"

"Yes, I come from India and have seen Gandhi and spoken to him on a few occasions."

He was pleased to hear this and said: "I am so glad. I shall now be able to say I have met someone who had met Gandhi."

Aware as I was of the fact that the fame of Gandhi had spread far and wide, I had not realized that even the man in the street, in countries not connected with India and parted from it by land and sea, had come to know him and respected him.

This leads my thoughts back to the year 1931. I was then in London and Mahatma Gandhi came there to attend the second Round Table Conference. Some people in India were of the opinion that he lost in prestige by that visit to England and made a mistake in attending the Conference. I do not agree with that view. I think he made a great impression on thinking people in England and created a friendly atmosphere in this country, in spite of the fact that in all his public utterances in London he made no secret of the fact that he desired the fullest political liberty for his country.

His dress elicited some mild criticism in certain quarters,

SIR ABDUL QADIR

but such criticism did not matter to Gandhi, and his personality and the significance attached to his participation in the Conference conquered it.

One of the strong points of Gandhi's character is his supreme indifference to what people say about any course of conduct which he has decided for himself, for good reasons that satisfy his conscience. He, therefore, continued to wear, during his last visit to England, the dress that he had adopted for years past. A loin cloth round his waist, his legs bare, and a sheet of home-spun cloth or a blanket round his shoulders, according to the season being hot or cold—this is now his dress, and he was not deterred from sticking to it, while travelling through France, where he received ovations, or attending big functions in London or in the sittings of the Round Table Conference itself. These sittings were not open to the public, as the hall in the palace at St. James's, where the Conference was held, was not large enough to allow the admission of visitors. I learnt, however, that they could occasionally allow someone to occupy a secretary's seat for a short while as a special case, and I managed to go in one day. Lord Sankey was in the Chair. On his right sat Sir Samuel Hoare, the Secretary of State for India, and Parliamentary representatives, and on the left the first place was given to Gandhi and then followed other Indian delegates, who occupied also the seats opposite the Chair. The deference that Lord Sankey appeared to pay to Gandhi was remarkable.

The climax of Gandhi's freedom from convention in the matter of dress was reached when I saw him mounting the carpeted stairs of Buckingham Palace to greet the King and Queen, with his blanket round his shoulders, at the Royal Party in honour of the Conference Delegates and other visitors. I do not think the Palace had seen a visitor in that costume before, nor is it easy to conceive that anyone else would have been allowed the same freedom.

SIR ABDUL QADIR

Two interesting questions arise in this connection. Firstly, why has Gandhi adopted this garb and secondly, what is it that has earned him the towering position in which the observance of established conventions can be waived in his case?

Those who have read Gandhi's own story of his life, styled *My Experiments with Truth*, know that when he first came to England to qualify for the Bar, he was familiar with the life of a man of fashion and wore suits made by West End tailors. After being called to the Bar and returning to India, he went to South Africa in connection with a law suit and decided to stay on there. It was then that the serious purpose of his life took shape. It was there that he began to make sacrifices for the welfare of his countrymen settled there. It was the contact with their troubles and sorrows which brought about a change in him. The story of his useful work there is too well known to require recapitulation here. When he returned to India and began to take part in the struggle for Indian freedom, he gave up all ideas of practising as a lawyer, and dedicated himself to the work of political and social reform. It was at this stage that he adopted the loin cloth, as a voluntary act of self-denial, reducing his standard of life to the minimum. There is nothing to distinguish Gandhi's garb from that which is worn by the poorest people. He tells us in the story of his life that "the idea of Renunciation appealed to him greatly, even when he was a student in London, as the highest form of religion." That early seed in his mind has now grown into a tree and borne fruit.

By the answer to the first question about the garb assumed by Gandhi, the second question has also been practically answered. His strength lies in his not wanting anything for himself. In his varied career, in the course of which intervals of hardship, detention and imprisonment have alternated with triumphal processions and en-

SIR ABDUL QADIR

thusiastic shouts of *Jai* (Victory) in his honour, there has been no question of "Self," of office or rank or emolument. It is this aspect of his life that has touched the hearts of friends and foes alike.

He has been invited by Governors and Viceroys to have frank talks with them about problems affecting the future of our country. Princes have consulted him and Ministers have sought his advice. A well-known verse of our famous Indian poet, Sir Mohammed Iqbal, fits in with a case such as this:

Dil-i-shah larza girad zi gadd-i-bē-niāze.

"The heart of a King trembles at the sight of a beggar who begs not."

It is this "begging not," this rising above personal want, which has given Gandhi the marvellous influence he possesses.

During his stay in England Mahatma Gandhi stayed at Kingsley Hall, in the East End of London, spending any time that could be spared from the work of the Round Table Conference among the poor. He is always happy when associated with them and enjoys the kinship of spirit between them and himself. He could have stayed at one of the palatial hotels of London if he had wished. He could have stayed with some of his friends in a well-furnished and comfortable home, but he preferred the invitation of Miss Muriel Lester of Kingsley Hall in Bow. This establishment provides a club for the working people in that area, where they have a social and intellectual centre and hold their meetings. It has some residential accommodation also, where one can live in a simple way on less than one pound a week for board and residence. Gandhi occupied one of the small rooms in this house, while he was representing India at the Conference. I have seen that room. The management of the place are proud of their

SIR ABDUL QADIR

association with Gandhi and gladly point out to visitors the room which is now called by Gandhi's name.

Gandhi has the rare gift of inspiring love wherever he lives. He collected round him a band of devoted men and women, including some Europeans, when he fought the battle for the rights of Indians in South Africa. He attracted a still larger number of zealous co-workers when he changed his sphere of work to a bigger field in India, and during his brief visit to England in 1931 he added a number of friends and admirers to those he already had. When he had to go to jail, on his return to India, his jailers felt drawn towards him, and when he was ill in hospital his nurses became so fond of his genial temperament that they were sorry when he recovered and left the ward. This is all the more remarkable, as his charm comes simply from the beauty of his soul and does not depend for assistance on charms of personal appearance. Gandhi's love has its source in a strong belief in God and in his deep spirit of religion. His autobiography is full of passages showing his belief. For instance, referring to the ideal which he wishes humanity to follow, he observes: "Infinite striving after perfection is our human right. It carries with it its own reward. The rest is in the hands of God." In the same book he tells us that "the religious spirit within him became a living force" at an early stage of his career in South Africa. Those, who have watched his life since, know that it is the same spirit which has been at work throughout his career and has made it possible for him to climb the great heights of patriotic fervour which he has reached and kept.

On his attaining the seventieth year of a life devoted to the service of the mother-land and to the cause of religion and humanity, he will receive numerous tributes. Most of them will be from persons who have worked with him or have known him well. I have had only glimpses of him and have not always agreed with him in matters of

SIR ABDUL QADIR

policy or about methods of work, but my appreciation of his lofty personal character and of his lifelong services to India is as sincere as of those who have had a closer and more intimate touch with him. The great awakening that we see among the masses of India owes more to his labours and influence than to any other living man. He stands as a demonstration of the power of the spirit, of what he calls "soul force," in the sceptic and materialistic world of to-day, and has thus earned for himself the title of *Mahatma*, or "the great soul," which has been conferred upon him by his countrymen.

INDIA'S DEBT TO GANDHI

by RAJENDRAPRASAD, M.A.
(President, Indian National Congress,
Patna, India)

Mahatma Gandhi's contribution to Indian politics has been immense. The Indian National Congress had been in existence for thirty years when he returned to India finally from South Africa in 1915. The Congress had aroused and organized national consciousness to a certain extent; but the awakening was confined largely to the English-educated middle classes and had not penetrated the masses. He carried it to the masses and made it a mass movement. Mahatma Gandhi's movement operated both horizontally and vertically. He took up causes which were not entirely political but which touched very intimately the life of large masses of people. His successful Satyāgrah in Champaran on behalf of the cultivators and labourers, who had suffered for a century or more under an iniquitous system of forced growing of indigo for the benefit of planters, at

once extended the sphere of Congress activity to the proportions of a mass movement. His equally successful Satyāgrah in Khaira for a revision of revenue assessment which was considered unjust had a similar appeal to the masses of the District. Congress politics was no longer confined to demanding a larger share in the higher public services of the country or seats on the Executive Councils of Governors. It identified itself with the sufferings of the toiling masses and, what was more, succeeded in securing relief for them. Since these early movements of 1917 and 1918 there have been others of a similar kind, and in all of them the objective has been the securing of benefit not for a small class or group but for masses at large. Fight for relief has not been directed only against the British interests or the British Government. It has unhesitatingly attacked Indian interests and prejudices with equal vigour. Thus the unsatisfactory conditions under which Indian labourers have to work in factories have not escaped his vigilant eyes and one of the earliest things he did was to help workers of Ahmedabad to secure better conditions. The miserable lot of the depressed classes has necessitated a relentless drive against the vicious and wicked custom of Untouchability among the Hindus, and Mahatma Gandhi has carried it on even at the risk of his life. The Congress organization has also spread and expanded, covering the entire length and breadth of this vast country, and has got to-day millions of men and women on its rolls. But the influence of the Congress extends far wider than its mere numbers would indicate. The depth of that influence has been tried and tested as people have passed through the fiery ordeal of suffering and sacrifice at its call.

Mahatma Gandhi's greatest contribution, however, does not consist in making the masses of India politically self-conscious and organizing them on a scale they had never before been organized. To my mind his greatest contribu-

RAJENDRAPRASAD

tion to Indian politics and perhaps to suffering humanity in the world at large lies in the unique method which he has prescribed and employed for fighting wrongs. He has taught us how it is possible for us to successfully fight the mighty British Empire without arms; he has given us and the world a moral substitute for war. He has lifted politics from the plane of sophistication and untruths, where at its worst it degenerated into low intrigue and at its highest could not rise beyond diplomatic circumlocutions and secret diplomacy, to the pitch of a high idealism in which the end, however noble, can in no circumstances justify recourse to means which are not pure and immaculate. He has placed truth on its pedestal of glory even in politics, no matter how harmful its effect appears to be at the moment. His frankness and deliberate exposure of ugly or weak spots in ourselves to our so-called enemies has confounded both friends and opponents alike. But he considers our strength lies not in concealing our weakness but in knowing and combating it. The rigorous observance of non-violence, even where temporary advantages may apparently be gained by ignoring or mitigating it, has been recognized by experience to be not only the straightest course but also the wisest policy. It was the moral and spiritual fervour of his teaching which at once caught the imagination of the people, who saw and recognized that when all was dark around he showed us the way out of our misery and slavery. When we were feeling utterly helpless he made us realize our own strength through Truth and Non-violence. Man, after all, is not born with arms and weapons. He does not possess even the claws of a tiger or the horns of a wild buffalo. He is born with a soul and a spirit. Why should he depend upon these extraneous things for his protection and uplift? Mahatma Gandhi has taught us that death and destruction await us if we rely upon them—that life and liberty are ours if we

RAJENDRAPRASAD

rouse the spirit within us. No power on earth can keep us under subjection once that spirit is roused, once that dependence on extraneous things and circumstances is given up and once self-confidence and self-reliance are created. India is gradually but none the less surely and steadily getting that self-realization and is in the measure of that self-realization becoming irresistible. God grant that she shall not be deflected from the strait and narrow course of Truth and Non-violence which she has selected under the guidance of Mahatma Gandhi! That is Mahatma Gandhi's greatest contribution to Indian politics and that will be India's contribution to the deliverance of the world.

THE FOOL OF GOD

by REGINALD REYNOLDS
(London)

His fools in vesture strange
God sent to range
The World and said: "Declare
Untimely wisdom; bear
Harsh witness and prepare
The paths of change."

These are the opening words of W. G. Hole's poem, *The Fools of God*, which I discovered in the *Visva-Bharati Quarterly* in 1929, a few months before I went to India. It is not a well-known poem, but I doubt if anything I have ever read made a more profound or lasting impression on my mind. This was due not merely to the intrinsic merit of the verses, but to the fact that they proved prophetic.

REGINALD REYNOLDS

The poem tells of God's instructions to his Fools: "Be deaf; defer to none, and ever perversely shun the prudent way." They depart

And proffering toil and thirst
To men in softness nursed,
Today by all are cursed,
Tomorrow blessed.

In their quest they scorn

The comfortable ways
Of men's consent and praise.

But "faith-befooled" they claim

To see the light that rings
Men's brows and makes them kings
With power to do the things
Of righteousness.

Within a few months of my discovering that poem I met—may I say it with all respect—Public Fool Number One, Mahatma Gandhi. And it did not take me long to discover that the vivid description in the lines that had so moved and inspired me fitted this man to the last detail.

In spite of all that has been argued to the contrary, I do not think Gandhi is a *clever* man. Since I first came to know him, ten years ago, I have often felt extremely critical of his words and his actions. I am not among those blind venerators to whom the Mahatma can do no wrong. I regard him neither as a Messiah nor as an *Avatār*. His claim to greatness would, in my mind, be a slender one if it had to rely upon his political sagacity. It is by other standards that he must be judged.

To explain the full and true significance of Gandhi it would be necessary to trace the whole history of Hinduism, from its earliest roots, laying stress upon those numerous reform movements which have their place in the develop-

REGINALD REYNOLDS

ment of every religion. For it is in the nature of organized religion to decay, and in its decay to throw out continually new seeds of life in which the spirit lives while the old husks die and the dead boughs wither.

I once heard a formidable American Christian catechizing one of Gandhi's disciples. He asked what book had most deeply influenced the Mahatma. Pencil and notebook were ready and we all knew what answer he hoped to receive. But the reply was: "The *Gītā*." The New Testament, together with the writings of Tolstoy and Ruskin, played its part. But primarily Gandhi is a Hindu Reformer.

And yet Gandhi is not merely a Hindu. His true prototype was Kabir, who first achieved honour as a saint among both Hindus and Mohammedans. He was the great prophet of Hindu-Moslem unity, a Moslem himself and disciple of the Hindu teacher Ramanand. Rabindranath Tagore has given us a beautiful English translation of Kabir's sayings from which it is possible to illustrate this historical link.¹

Put thy cleverness away: mere words shall never unite thee
to Him.

Do not deceive thyself with the witness of the Scriptures:
Love is something other than this, and he who has sought
it truly has found it.

Here in three lines is the very essence of Gandhi's teaching as a religious leader—and it is as a religious leader that I wish to consider him at the moment.

When an Indian scholar once wrote an article entitled "Does the *Gītā* support Orthodoxy?" (it was published later in *The Aryan Path* of March 1933), he sent it to Gandhi for his perusal. The Mahatma's reply—dated Yeravda Central Prison, January 11, 1933—was characteristic:

"I have now carefully read both your articles on the
Gītā. I have found them to be interesting.

¹ All quotations from Kabir are from *Kabir's Poems*, translated by Rabindranath Tagore and published by Macmillan (5s. net).

REGINALD REYNOLDS

"I observe that you have reached the same conclusion that I had by a different method. Yours is the learned way. Not so mine."

Needless to say, the conclusion of both the scholar and the Fool of God was that the *Gītā* gave no support to orthodoxy. But Gandhi had not reached his standpoint through "cleverness."

Kabir might well have been writing about Gandhi when he said:

"It is a hard fight and a weary one, this fight of the truth-seeker; for the vow of the truth-seeker is more hard than that of the warrior, or the widowed wife who would follow her husband.

"For the warrior fights for a few hours, and the widow's struggle with death is soon ended:

"But the truth-seeker's battle goes on day and night, as long as life lasts it never ceases."

Or again, when Kabir speaks of life and death, the spiritual heritage of Gandhi is manifest:

"If your bonds be not broken whilst living, what hope of deliverance in death?

"It is but an empty dream that the soul shall have union with Him because it has passed from the body:

"If He is found now, He is found then,

"If not, we do but go to dwell in the City of Death."

Something equivalent to the Catholic and Protestant traditions in Christianity can be traced in most religions. Each tradition has its typical faults and its high peaks of achievement, and the apex of Protestantism is to be found among the finest of its Puritans. In our age we are inclined to see nothing in the Puritan but his intolerable negations: it is too easy to forget what Puritanism in its inception had to contend with. In his right place the Puritan is but a stern physician who prescribes abstinence and a strict regimen for a patient who is sick from a surfeit. That may

not be the conscious purpose of the Puritan: it is his historical function.

Wherever great movements of social reform or revolution are found, a strain of Puritanism can be discovered. It is part of the discipline of men and women who have to give up much in order to concentrate their energies upon one thing. That the leaders of modern India should be Puritans and the chief of them all a rigorous ascetic is therefore no accident. A revolt against imperialism could make no headway unless it struck at the fetters and blinkers which kept the people of India ignorant, indolent, caste-ridden and superstitious. Gandhi was able to lead the movement for political emancipation because he opposed the power of the priests, the evils accepted by the orthodox, "Untouchability," the inferior status of women, child marriages, neglect of public hygiene, religious intolerance, wasteful expenditure on marriages, the use of opium—in short, the social corruption which had produced political inertia.

Once more we shall find that a long tradition had existed in India, with intermittent manifestations of considerable interest, which helps to explain the success of Gandhi's work in opposition to the conservative main-current of Hindu orthodoxy.

Long before Gandhi's time there were "Fools of God" in India. In Bengal the *Baüls* (the name signifies "mad-caps") included both Moslems and Hindus, chiefly of the lower castes. Spiritually their affinity with Kabir has been noted. They rejected scriptural authority and the sacredness of temples, for, as one of their songs complains:

Thy path, O Lord, is hidden by mosque and temple:
Thy call I hear, but priest and *guru* bar the way.

They believed in voluntary poverty, in self-respect and

REGINALD REYNOLDS

self-knowledge. Their God was the "inner *guru*," the "Man of the Heart."

And it was a Baül who said—as a warning to myself and others who with our little learning try to appraise the incalculable—

A goldsmith, methinks, has come into the garden:
He would appraise the Lotus, forsooth,
By rubbing it on his touchstone.

Judged by the standard of the goldsmith the lotus was valueless. Our familiar measures may often prove equally deceptive when human wisdom sits in judgment over the Fools of God.

HOMAGE FROM A MAN OF THE WEST
TO GANDHI

by ROMAIN ROLLAND
(Villa Olga, Villeneuve,
Switzerland)

Gandhi is not only for India a hero of national history, whose legendary memory will be enshrined in the millennial epoch. He has not only been the spirit of active life which has breathed into the peoples of India the proud consciousness of their unity, of their power, and the will to their independence. He has renewed, for all the peoples of the West, the message of their Christ, forgotten or betrayed. He has inscribed his name among the sages and saints of humanity; and the radiance of his figure has penetrated into all the regions of the earth.

In the eyes of Europe he appeared at a moment when such an example seemed almost a miracle. Europe had

ROMAIN ROLLAND

barely emerged from four years of furious war, of which the ravages, the ruins and the rancours were persisting, sowing the seeds of fresh and even more implacable wars, conjoined with the overturning of revolutions, with their fatal train of social hatreds, which was gnawing the heart of nations. Europe was under the weight of a heavy night, pregnant with misery and despair, without a single ray of light. The appearance of Gandhi, this feeble and nude little man, who repudiated all violence, whose only arms were his reason and his love, and whose humble and stubborn gentleness had just achieved its first victories, seemed a paradoxical defiance hurled in the face of the politics and the thought, traditional, accepted, and unquestioned, of the West. But it was, at the same time, a beam of health which shot through the despair. One could hardly believe it. . . . And it was some time before one could be convinced of the reality of such a prodigy . . . Who knew this better than I, who was one of the first in the West to discover and to spread the message of the Mahatma? . . . But in the degree that the certainty of the existence and the constant, patient and progressive activity of the spiritual master of India made itself felt, a torrent of recognition and of faith flowed from the West towards him. For many, he was like a return of Christ. For others, for independent thinkers, disturbed by the disordered movement of the civilization of the West, whose direction was no longer governed by any moral principle, and whose marvellous genius of discovery and invention is monstrously distorted towards its own ruin, Gandhi was a new incarnation of Jean-Jacques Rousseau and of Tolstoy, denouncing the illusions and the crimes of civilization, and preaching to men the return to nature, to the simple life, to health. Governments pretended to ignore and despise him. But the peoples felt him to be their best friend and their brother. I have seen here, in

ROMAIN ROLLAND

Switzerland, the pious love that he inspired in humble peasants of the countryside and the mountains.

But if his message of wisdom and love, like that of the Master of "The Sermon on the Mount," has touched the hearts of countless good people, he did not depend upon it (any more than he would have counted on that of the Master of Nazareth) to change the course of destiny of a world which was itself dedicated to war and to destruction. To be applied to politics, the doctrine of Non-violence requires a very different moral climate from that which pervades the Europe of to-day; it demands a total, immense and unanimous sacrifice of self, which has no present chance of success, in the face of the growing ferocity of the new systems of totalitarian dictatorships, which have been established in the world, and which have left their pitiless traces in the blood of millions of men. The radiance of such sacrifices has neither the possibility nor the hope of exerting a victorious influence except at the end of a very long period of trial for the peoples. And the latter cannot find the heroism to support them unless they feel sustained and exalted by a faith like that of Gandhi. This faith in God is lacking in the majority of men in the West, among the people as much as among their leaders. And new faiths (nationalist or revolutionary) are progenitors of violence. The most urgent task for the peoples of Europe is to defend by all means their liberties, their independence and even their lives, menaced by the devouring imperialisms of allied fascist and racist States. Their political abdication would inevitably lead to the servitude of humanity, perhaps for centuries. In these circumstances we cannot recommend the practice of Gandhi's doctrine, however much we may respect it.

It seems to us that it is called to play in the world the role of those great monasteries of the Christian Middle Ages, wherein were preserved, as on an islet in the midst

ROMAIN ROLLAND

of the surging ocean, the purest treasure of moral civilization, the spirit of peace and of love, the serenity of the spirit. Glorious and sacred role! May the spirit of Gandhi, as aforetime that of the great founders of the Christian orders, of St. Bruno, of St. Bernard, of St. Francis, maintain, among the raging torments of the age of crisis and of transformation which the human race is traversing, the *Civitas Dei*, the love of men, harmony!

And we, intellectuals, men of science, men of letters, artists, we who are also working, within the limits of our feeble strength, to prepare for the mind that "City of all men, where reigns the 'Truce of God'"—we who are "the third order" (to use the language of the Church) and who belong to the panhumanist confraternity, we offer our fervent homage of love and veneration to our master and brother, Gandhi, who is realizing, in the heart and in action, our ideal of humanity to come.

AN ENGLISHWOMAN'S FAITH

by MISS MAUD ROYDEN, M.A., D.D.
(Sevenoaks, Kent, England)

It is a strange thing that Christians should feel, as many of us do, that the best Christian in the world to-day is a Hindu. The more I see of Gandhiji's work and read of his teaching, the more I feel that this is the case. He will, I know, not resent it if I add that, to me, Jesus of Nazareth is unique in his perfection: all I say, and this I feel bound to say, is that of his disciples to-day there is none so near to him as Mahatma Gandhi.

The numbers of *Harijan* that reach me week by week

MISS MAUDE ROYDEN

are like a drink of pure water in a hot and thirsty land. "Power politics" with all their false appeal and false philosophy have misled even the workers for peace, in Europe to-day. Many of them now believe that to "enforce justice" is possible, and that it will lead to peace. They seem to have forgotten that cartoon of years ago, after the partition of Poland, showing the figure of a woman lying gagged and bound on the earth and guarded by a man armed to the teeth, with the legend "All is quiet in Warsaw." They seem to have forgotten that the attacks made on Russia after the war seated the Bolshevik Government ever more and more firmly in the saddle; that the bludgeoning of Germany has led to the enthronement of Hitler; and that twenty years after the "war to end war" we are more threatened with war than before we waged it and waged it victoriously!

To read the words of Gandhi in *Harijan* is to be lifted above this senseless noise and confusion into a purer and a clearer air—clearer, for it enables us to see above the dust of battle and purer, because it is inspired by such utter fidelity to truth.

Englishmen have sometimes accused Gandhi of being subtle. I say "accused" because, though subtlety is not in itself necessarily a bad thing, it is used here as a reproach—almost as a charge of insincerity. I can only say that, at first, I used to read with some anxiety the questions put to the Mahatma and the answers given by him, as reported in *Harijan*; but now do so in the joyful confidence that he will never shirk or evade any difficulty at all. Questions put by Dr. J. R. Moto or by Kagawa or by Pierre Cerésole—all will be met with absolute sincerity.

After long years of experience in the political and religious worlds of this country—not, I am persuaded, less truthful than others—such sincerity is like a breath of heaven.

MISS MAUDE ROYDEN

When he was in England for the Round Table Conference, Gandhiji came to the Guildhouse, to speak to us on voluntary poverty. The hall was crowded and hundreds stood outside. We listened with strained attention to hear what one had to say to us who not only talked of it but had actual experience of it. At the end many questions were asked. Sometimes the Mahatma paused before answering. Again I knew that he paused only that he might give the most exact and perfectly truthful answer that human language could convey. I remember his saying, "To possess nothing is, at first, not like taking your clothes off your body but like taking your flesh off your bones." He went on—"If you say to me, 'But, Mr. Gandhi, you are wearing a piece of cotton cloth. How can you say you have nothing?', I shall answer that, as long as I have a body, I suppose I must wrap it in something. But," he added with a most engaging smile, "if anyone here likes to take it from me he can have it. I shall not call in the police!"

A paternal British Government had provided the Mahatma with a corps of policemen, all of whom were standing in the Guildhouse at the moment and listening to him. They could not refrain from a burst of laughter; neither could anybody else.

One of the things that delighted many English people was the discovery that the great Mahatma had the same sense of humour and laughed at the same things as ourselves. I had the honour of driving him a little way in my car. On the way he asked me about my honorary degree. "What is this 'D.D.' that you have?" he said. I explained that it was the degree of a Doctor of Divinity, bestowed on me (*honoris causa*) by Glasgow University. "Ah," said he, "so you know *all about divinity?*"

How well I remember, too, the beginning of that little drive! Gandhiji had promised to let me take him to his



B - the V. I.

J. M. Dent & Sons

"EAST AND WEST"

MISS MAUDE ROYDEN

next engagement, but when we came out of the Guild-house there was a surging mob of people around and I could not immediately find my car. Every car in London seemed to be driving past, and lingering in the hope that its driver might be chosen for the honour. The day was cold and wet, the Mahatma scantily clad. Sorrowfully I knew that I must not keep him. "Take the next car," I said, "don't wait for mine." "I shall wait for yours," he said. I felt I had received a crown! And the words of a follower of Jesus came to me—"As having nothing, yet possessing all things." Gandhiji had no car but scores of cars circled round him in the hope that he would choose one of them!

It is, of course, on the question of non-violent non-resistance that Gandhiji means most to the world of to-day. It is the knowledge that he, after all he has suffered and after an experience of life of nearly seventy years, not only believes in it but believes in it more and more every day, that may yet save not only India but the world. It is when questions are put to him on this point that I, suffocated by the hatreds and the violence of Europe, read with intensest eagerness.

Above all, it is as a woman that I hope most from this Great Soul.

In some of the most recent issues of *Harijan* the test question, so often put both to men and women over here, has been put to Gandhiji. What must a woman do if she is threatened with violation? Well, what will the Mahatma say? Will he shirk the question? Say he is not a woman and can't answer for them? Or what? How will he answer?

He answers that a woman may resist, and resist unto death, but not use any other kind of violence. I salute him in the name of women. The monstrous idea that a woman is in a different position from a man with regard to her "honour" because she can be "dishonoured" against her

MISS MAUDE ROYDEN

will, so commonly, so universally taught, is slain by such an answer. It is not true: no woman and no man can be dishonoured by anything done to them by another. Only we ourselves can dishonour ourselves. Certainly there are things that are "worse than death" and dishonour is one of them. But dishonour does not lie in the act or the will of anyone but ourself. Who has dared to give this answer but Gandhi? All women should honour him for it.

Can he convince the world? It is horrible to think that the belief in force, so prevalent in the West, may succeed in undermining the Mahatma's influence with his own countrymen and convince them that force alone can meet force. It will be the tragedy not of India only but of the British Empire and of the world. Not in Europe alone, nor in the West with its two great continents of the Americas, but in the East also, in Japan, even in Confucian pacifist China, the belief in violence gains ground. Can India keep the faith? Will she, alone in a warring world, hold to the truth and show us the light? If so, the world is saved. If not——?

Oh, India, do not fail!

THE FRUITS OF TRUE LEADERSHIP

by THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SAMUEL,
G.C.B., G.B.E., D.C.L.
• (London)

From time to time Gandhiji does things and says things that exasperate me. They seem to me unreasonable and perverse. Not seldom I feel myself to be his opponent and not his supporter. Yet all the while I am sure that here

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SAMUEL

is a man who, with utter sincerity and utter self-sacrifice, is striving passionately, by this road or by that road, towards good ends.

Let the world recognize its great men. Let the world show gratitude to its great servants. "To the dead the roses; to the living the thorns," has been said in irony. Let us sometimes offer roses, when well deserved, to the living also.

In his long life Gandhiji has rendered many services—to India, and through India to mankind. Three are outstanding.

He found a people whose characteristic was "oriental submissiveness." To be conquered, to be ruled, to be backward, uneducated, superstitious, poverty-stricken—this was accepted, for the countless masses of the Indian people, as the destined lot—commanded by the history of the past and imposed by the irresistible conditions of the present. Gandhi came forward as a leader of the movement, then small and precarious, to change all that. His qualities soon gave him pre-eminence. He had that combination of spiritual enthusiasm with shrewd practical judgment which, when rarely it appears, moves masses and wins resounding triumphs.

He taught the Indian to straighten his back, to raise his eyes, to face circumstance with steady gaze. It has been said that "Life can only be understood backwards, but it must be lived forwards." Gandhi taught his people to study their past, not so as to be absorbed by it, but in order to learn its lesson; he inspired them to grasp the present with strong hands, in order that they might actively mould the future. He taught them to "live forwards." And in this fuller dignity, in this stronger striving, he showed it to be vital that the women of India should also share.

The British are a self-respecting people. For that very reason we respect self-respect in others. I do not hesitate

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SAMUEL

to say that—in spite of all the controversy and all the conflict of recent years—there is more true esteem among the British people for the Indian people to-day than at any previous time in all the centuries of their contact.

A sixth of mankind dwell in the territories of India. Gandhi, more than any other one man, has helped to raise the status, to uplift the spirit of this great section of the human race. India should be grateful to him for it. And Britain should be grateful. And the world at large, which indirectly and ultimately shares the benefit, should be grateful.

The movement was stained by some terrible crimes and outrages. But never at Gandhi's instigation. They were committed in open disobedience to his earnest appeals.

The second great achievement which makes his name illustrious is that he successfully combined liberty as the aim with non-violence as the method. Protest, persuasion, disobedience if need be; but not force, not killing of opponents, not outrage, not rebellion—that was, and is, his message.

In India such a policy fits the character of the people. It calls for much self-sacrifice, which they are always ready to give, and it conforms to their sense of what is right. It is a conduct that is essentially religious, in the best sense of that often misused word. And it has proved effective. Non-violence, coupled with energetic effort on the part of great masses of the people, has overcome a short-sighted, but not unnatural opposition far more speedily and far more completely than the contrary policy could ever have done.

Gandhi's third great service has been to take up, with vigour and power, the cause of the depressed classes; to bring it into the forefront of Indian politics; and to set it well on the road to success.

The treatment of the outcastes—it must be frankly said

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SAMUEL

by all who are true friends of India—is a dark blot upon her social and religious history. What kind of religion is it which condemns vast multitudes for no inherent fault? which first degrades, and then keeps them under, for no other reason than that they are degraded? True religion must ever seek to liberate and uplift, never to oppress, the human soul.

Gandhi has realized all this with keen, direct insight. He has felt it deeply. In face of an obstinate, obscurantist resistance, he has striven, incessantly and indefatigably, to raise these millions of suffering people; and, by freeing India from this disgrace, to bring her towards her rightful place in the forefront of civilization. And now he is able to see this movement also steadily gaining ground; he is able to feel the certainty of its ultimate success.

What other living man, looking back on the record of seventy years, can survey achievements such as these—leadership in uplifting the spirit and exalting the dignity of a vast nation; leadership in showing the world of to-day and of to-morrow that the greatest results in the field of public affairs can be won by the sheer power of the human spirit, without the brutality of force; leadership in rescuing from a degradation, that has lasted through century after century, tens of millions of the victims of injustice?

Gandhiji, at this moment of retrospect, may well feel content with the survey. Let others, too, bring him their tribute. He has often been pricked and scarred by the bitter thorns. Let us offer him now the roses of our gratitude.

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SANKEY

IMPRESSIONS FROM THE ROUND TABLE
CONFERENCE

by THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SANKEY,
M.A., D.C.L.
(London)

In this article I do not propose to comment upon Mr. Gandhi's career or to criticize his social and political views. The strength of his character is sufficiently proved by the fact that his followers speak of him in terms of unqualified praise and his opponents in terms of vehement condemnation. The present contribution is a personal one by an admirer who does not entirely share all his views.

I met Mr. Gandhi for the first time on September 13, 1931. For a few months we sat next to one another, hour after hour and day after day, at the Federal Structure Committee of the Indian Round Table Conference. Then he returned to India, and I have never seen him since. After sitting next to a man during very difficult debates and in many anxious moments you must either like or dislike him, and I hope I may be reckoned as one of Mr. Gandhi's friends.

He came over to England to attend the meetings of the Federal Structure Committee, and I was introduced to him at an interview at the Dorchester Hotel in London. Vast crowds were waiting outside, as the rumour had got about that he was coming. He was a small figure, dressed entirely in white, but he carried himself as if conscious of his dignity and his reputation. His appearance was striking, but what impressed me most was a pair of very large and lustrous eyes, from which at times you could judge his inner thoughts and convictions.

I was requested to withdraw with him to a distant corner of the room to discuss the situation, as I had been

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SANKEY

appointed Chairman of the Committee. He gave his views at considerable length. He complained of the inferior status of India, but his chief concern appeared to be the great expense of government which caused, he said, heavy taxes on the poor. Throughout the whole of the conversation his concern for the poor was his prevailing topic. He was especially anxious for the fate of those who lived in the countryside and villages of India, and agreed that over-industrialization was an evil. He expounded to me his belief in Satyāgraha, and when the question arose as to defence he was particularly insistent upon the Hindu doctrine of Ahimsā, or non-violence.

At the end of a long interview it was impossible not to come away with very decided impressions of the man. First, last, and all the time his religious fervour was manifest.

It seemed to me that he had been influenced by the writings of Tolstoy, and his cure for social evils was a return to the simple life. Secondly, he stood out as a great Hindu patriot, with a burning love of his country and a desire to advance its prestige and its reputation, and a longing to help the poor and oppressed. Lastly, it was obvious that he was a great political leader, for it was clear that he had a sincere and unshakeable belief not only as to the ends which he desired to reach but also as to the means by which he was to attain them.

The first meeting of the Committee was held at St. James's Palace, London, on September 14th. It was Mr. Gandhi's silence day, and he did not utter a single word. On Tuesday, the 15th, he made his first speech, and perhaps the following note made at the time may be found interesting: "Mr. Gandhi spoke very slowly and deliberately, 57 words a minute. He spoke for nearly an hour without a note. He put his hands together and seemed to pray before he began. He sat next to me. He wore sandals,

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SANKEY

a loin cloth, and a large white shawl or cape." He asked for independence for India and control of army and finance. How Mr. Gandhi managed to stand the physical and mental strain of that Conference has always been a marvel to me. Without fail he was there at the beginning and he remained till the end of the day's work. A note made at the time tells me that on some days as many as 80,000 words were spoken.

But Mr. Gandhi's real task only began when the Conference adjourned. Hour after hour till late in the night, and early in the morning, he was engaged in conversations and interviews with the different interests, doing his best to get them into line and to bring them to his own way of thinking. Prime Ministers and Dictators have means and opportunities of imposing their views on their peoples, but it is doubtful whether there has ever been any man, other than Mr. Gandhi, who has in his lifetime won so many millions of men over to his side by his own efforts and example.

It was my good fortune during the Conference to meet many of the distinguished men of India, both old and young, and of all creeds and classes, but whether they agreed with him or not, all were impressed by the extraordinary personality of the Mahatma.

From time to time he seemed to be guided by some inner voice. Other great men at different periods of the world's history have had a similar experience. For example, Socrates and St. Paul. Whether such men are following the delusions of a madman, or are endowed with a wisdom not of this world, at any rate they seem to exercise a commanding influence over those who are brought into contact with them. Mr. Gandhi is a political mystic, sometimes impossible but always religious, and always anxious to do what he can for India and the poor.

With regard to his political career, it is not for me to

THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SANKEY

speak. Politicians are sometimes hardly dealt with. In a well-known passage in *Sesame and Lilies*, John Ruskin says: "We may intrude ten minutes' talk on a Cabinet Minister, answered probably with words worse than silence being deceptive." Whether Ruskin would have done any better had he been called to be a political leader is doubtful, and when Western politicians criticize with some asperity Mr. Gandhi's political career, they will do well to remember that those who live in glass houses shouldn't throw stones.

No doubt Mr. Gandhi has placed before himself high ideals, yet I sometimes wonder what would have happened had he found himself with power and responsibility not merely among his own people, but over the many different creeds and races in the vast population of India. In such a position the politician has to consider ways and means. But ways and means are not for the prophets, and in the long run the prophets generally beat the politicians.

If I may give my view, it is that when Mr. Gandhi's life comes to an end it will be generally admitted that, thanks to his efforts, he left the world better than he found it.

A GREAT PROPHET OF HINDUISM

by D. S. SARMA, M.A.
(Pachaiappa's College, Madras)

An American tourist once said that he came to India to see three things—the Himalayas, the Taj Mahal, and Mahatma Gandhi. We in this country stand too near Mahatma Gandhi to see his personality in its true proportions or to understand the significance in human history of what he calls his experiments with Truth. He has him-

self declared that his message is universal, though it is delivered in India and in terms of Indian politics. But politics is the least part of the man whose ultimate aim is to lift the human species to a higher moral and spiritual plane.

We have witnessed in our own age the triumphs of aviation. We hear every day of adventurous men and women who fly from continent to continent across thousands of miles and land and sea without in the least minding the terrible risks involved in such an undertaking. The invention of the aeroplane and its swift adoption by the nations of the earth for the purposes of war and peace have, as we all know, opened a new page in history. But Mahatma Gandhi's invention is far more important to mankind than the aeroplane and will have a momentous influence on their fortunes in the centuries to come. For his Satyāgraha is nothing but spiritual aeronautics. When it is properly understood and correctly practised it would enable not only individuals but also nations to fly away from the tiger and the ape in man in the direction of that mysterious perfection of all spiritual values which we call God. Some people may laugh to-day at his doctrine of non-violence or what he calls the soul-force and may ask what will happen to it when it has to face a machine-gun or an incendiary bomb. Evidently they have not understood the story of Christianity. They only remind us of the member of Parliament—he must have been one of the Liberals—who in a discussion about the newly invented railway locomotive asked what would happen to it if it was attacked on the proposed road by an angry cow. But a hundred years hence—or probably a thousand years hence, for man is still an infant in the kingdom of the spirit—when all the present military dictators of Europe and those who think like them will have long been dust in their graves and the barbarous armaments which they

are piling up have gone the same way, the spiritual weapon forged by this frail Hindu will have been universally adopted and the nations of the earth will bless him for having pointed out to them a higher and a better way—a way which alone is really worthy of human beings. Then he will be recognized by all as a true messenger of God, whose message, like that of Buddha, Christ or Muhammad, is not confined to one country or nation.

Hinduism is the oldest of living religions. It has an unbroken record of over forty centuries. Its book of revelations is not closed. It ever contemplates the proclamation of new gospels, the promulgation of new laws and the advent of new prophets and avatars. In a word, it is a progressive realization of Truth. And to-day it is passing through a period of Renaissance and a memorable chapter is being added to its history. For Mahatma Gandhi, who is a true incarnation of Hindu spirituality and in the direct line of descent from the ancient Rishis, is re-interpreting its eternal truths and applying them in a marvellously original manner to the conditions of the modern world. His gospel of Satyagraha, as he himself says, is only an extension and an application of the fundamental Hindu doctrine of Ahimsa to all national and international problems. No other country in the world than India has the requisite religious background for the extending and the implementing of this great doctrine which is calculated to release the divinity in man. His idea of Swaraj, which is to be won by non-violence and in which all religions would have equal treatment and all communities equal rights and privileges, is only an expression in political terms of the Hindu doctrine—*Ekam sad vipra bahudha vadanti*. The great movement he has started for the abolition of untouchability and the removal of the inequalities of the modern caste system has for its object the restoration to its original purity of the spirit of Varnasrama

D. S. SARMA

Dharma, which according to him is the greatest communism on earth. His passionate plea for the revival of the spinning-wheel and the handloom in the villages of India as well as his argument for total prohibition in this country is a reminder to us of the character of Indian civilization which has to be preserved at all costs. And, above all, his method of religious approach to all political and social problems and his insistence on Truth and Non-violence in every sphere of life and his recognition of the spiritual unity of all men even in the details of every-day life are aspects of Hinduism at its best. Moreover, by his ascetic habits, his fasts and penances and his life of renunciation, he has upheld the ancient Hindu ideals of Brahmacharya, Tapasya and Vairagya in the modern world in which there is so much to corrupt every sense. Thus both by precept and by example Mahatma Gandhi is pointing the way to a future of Hinduism which will be really worthy of its past. Undoubtedly he is one of the greatest creative personalities in the history of this religion and his speeches and writings will form part of the sacred books of Hindus.

THE GREAT LITTLE MAHATMA

by CLARE SHERIDAN
(London)

It is almost impossible for anyone to appreciate the real personality of the great little Mahatma, who has not met him.

In England the Press deliberately misrepresent him. If he were given a fair deal his publicity would be somewhat on the scale of that of the Dictators. I have often thought

CLARE SHERIDAN

how wonderful it would be if instead of "tuning in" on a certain day at a certain hour to hear a menacing and ranting speech from across water, the world could hear the voice of Mahatma Gandhi and listen to some of his uncompromising truths! How illuminating, how instructive that would be: clear explanations, idealist views and no hate, no threats of violence.

I remember my surprise when Lord Londonderry asked me if "Gandhi hates us very much." *

The idea that Gandhi could HATE, either individually or collectively, betrayed such a deep misunderstanding of his nature.

I was privileged to see him "close up" during those Round Table Conference days; through my friend, Sarojini Naidu, the Mahatma was induced to allow me to model his portrait.

It was not easy. He would not pose. This was either by modesty, through overwork, or because he was not interested in Art! Probably all three.

I was reminded of Lenin who made similar conditions when in 1920 I was admitted to his workroom in the Kremlin. There is a curious similarity between these two. Both are passionate idealists, even if they are divided on the value of violence.

The first time I found myself in his presence, the Mahatma said (just as Lenin had said), "I cannot pose, you must let me go on with my work, and do the best you can."

Gandhi squatting upon the floor proceeded with his weaving. Lenin in his office chair went on reading.

I sensed—on both occasions—a silent resentment, but in each case it ended on terms of great mutual friendship. One day Gandhi, in almost the same words and with the same ironical smile as Lenin, observed:

"So you are a cousin of Mr. Winston Churchill!"

CLARE SHERIDAN

It was the same old joke: Winston's relation fraternizing (yes?) with his arch enemy! And Gandhi pursued:

"You know he refuses to see me? But you will tell him, won't you, from me how glad I am to see you."

Lenin in much the same way: "You will tell your cousin . . . etc."

And when their respective heads were finished and I asked one and the other the question: "What do you think of it?" they answered identically, "I don't know—I cannot judge of my own face, and I know nothing about Art—but you have worked well!"

I sometimes wonder which of these two men will leave the greater imprint on the world.

Lenin would seem—as far as Russia is concerned—to have left no imprint, other than a preserved body in a glass case. But it is too early to judge. Christianity took two hundred years to get under way.

Gandhi is still active. His work begins to bear fruit.

I believe that both these men have given an indestructible message to the world. A message that heartens those who were rejected and downtrodden. A message that has enabled the humble to raise their heads, and recognize their place in the sun.

In Gandhi's message there is a degree of spirituality that raises it to a sublime level.

Those who have died in the cause of Lenin would seem to be heroes, but those who have died in the name of Gandhi would seem to be both heroes and martyrs.

I had an opportunity of comparing notes with the American sculptor, Joe Davidson, who also modelled a head of Gandhi. Joe Davidson has modelled most of the prominent men of our time, and we agreed they were disappointing to meet. Hardly one of them would leave an impression, if he had not been "dished up" with the

CLARE SHERIDAN

recognizable trimmings of sentries and a background of usurped palaces. But Gandhi stands out above all these. In his grandiose simplicity the little bare-legged man, wrapped around in his "Khaddar," is deeply impressive. So impressive is he, such is the respect that he inspires, that I reverently kissed his hand at our final parting, when he assured me that he had grown to love me (in the Christ sense) and that he never forgot his friends.

A statuette of him, in the cross-legged position in which he sat weaving, has the place of honour on my writing-table. Actually he is looking down intent upon his weaving, but to me he is a Buddha in deep contemplation, and I sense the flow of cosmic thoughts that emanate from his immovable quietude.

It was a little world that surrounded him in those London days, but from the point of view of diverseness of representation it was immense.

Every morning, from ten to twelve, he was available to all those who sought his advice or proffered appreciation. He received them with a fraternal kindliness and tolerance, but never let them interrupt his spinning. Only once did he rise to his feet to greet a visitor. I do not believe he would have risen for a royalty, but he rose for a Canon of the Church of England who came with a book, and begged him to write "What we should do to be better Christians."

I was impressed by the firm yet gentle way in which he dismissed those who stayed too long or whose questions seemed importunate!

There was a gentleman who claimed to have known him in South Africa, and who tried vainly to recall himself to Gandhi's memory:

"Don't you remember our talks in South Africa, Mr. Gandhi?"

"I remember South Africa——"

CLARE SHERIDAN

"Don't you remember the garden of the hotel in Durban?"

"I remember being admitted to the hotel on condition I did not go into the garden—they only tolerated a Hindu if he stuck to his room—but that is of no interest. I am delighted to see you, Mr. A, but I wouldn't like to keep you if you are in a hurry—"

I felt rather sorry for Mr. A's discomfiture, but I don't believe that Gandhi was haphazard in his aloofness. Perhaps he really *did* remember certain "talks in South Africa."

The next visitor (they followed in a kind of procession, announced by a disciple-secretary) was a well-dressed typical Englishman whom the Mahatma greeted with great friendliness. Conversation, however, did not rise above the weather and the greenness of England. The visitor was a doctor who had saved his life when he operated him urgently by candle-light, for appendicitis.

The doctor was followed by a French lady lawyer who, in answer to the Mahatma's question, "Does France still preserve her war spirit?" drew herself up protestingly: "Monsieur Gandhi, we did not make the war. We defended ourselves." To which "Monsieur" Gandhi smiled tolerantly.

Then came the editor of a Left wing "weekly." Every question I had longed to ask was presented for discussion. The editor had very precise arguments. Gandhi had an answer to everything; his answers were conclusive and satisfying.

When the editor was through, the wife of Paul Robeson flopped down on the floor at his feet and asked for his opinion on the negro question in the United States. It was quite obviously a problem which the Mahatma had not hitherto been called upon to consider! Mrs. Robeson, however, produced statistics: "Do you think some day the negroes will predominate?"

Gandhi did *not* think so. She persisted.

CLARE SHERIDAN

"Do you think we may be assimilated?"

"Perhaps——"

"And then——?"

"Well, then it will be no longer a *negro* problem."

Suddenly a young German woman burst in unannounced. She appeared to know the Mahatma so well that she could dispense with ceremony. He paused in his spinning, and extended his bony, supple hand. She took it in both of hers and held it as though she held some sacred relic.

"You are going back to Germany?" he asked.

She bowed her head, her lips trembled, but she did not answer. There were tears in her eyes.

"Good-bye——"

She took a step backwards, her arms still extended, her eyes fixed upon him in a kind of ecstasy—a sob, and she disappeared.

A turbaned messenger arrived from the Aga Khan—"Very important, His Highness hopes you will agree to arbitration——"

Then a Hindu student presented his American wife. Gandhi shot a comprehensive glance at her and asked the young man:

"Do you intend to take your wife to India?"

The answer in the affirmative sounded, I thought, a little nervous. The bride was naïve, radiant, full of self-confidence. "When are you coming to the United States, Mahatma?"

"Not yet——"

"Everybody's crazy about you over there!"

The Mahatma's eyes twinkled: "My well-informed friends tell me I'd be relegated to the Zoo!" (Protests and laughter.)

Then the Mahatma's biographer, C. F. Andrews, intervened to discuss details for the week-end.

"Yes—yes," agreed Gandhi, who was absorbed in mending a broken strand.

CLARE SHERIDAN

"—and this evening, Bapu, don't forget the reception by fifteen Anglican bishops. The Bishop of London is coming expressly to meet you at seven o'clock."

Gandhi looked up sharply: "What about the seven o'clock prayer?"

Mr. Andrews suggested that it be either advanced or retarded. Gandhi decided: "It shall be in the car on the way."

One sensed the difficulty of maintaining an Eastern ascetic's life in a Western turmoil. Monday's day of silence was continually threatened and maintained only with the most determined effort. Food, too, was a constant pre-occupation.

Having expressed my appreciation for being allowed to be present on one occasion at the seven-o'clock-in-the-evening prayer, the Mahatma said: "It is open to all, but if you would like to come to the three-o'clock-in-the-morning prayer, I will arrange with my friends for you to spend the night at Kingsley Hall—but you will have to bring your blankets, for we are poor people there."

Kingsley Hall was a welfare organization for factory workers, to which Miss Lester devoted her life and fortune. It was to show his appreciation of Miss Lester and her work that the Mahatma had accepted the hospitality of Kingsley Hall during his official visit to England.

I arrived on a foggy, freezing night and was taken to my room, a little white monastic cubicle. Access to it was across an open terrace on the roof. A white veiled figure leaning on the parapet was Mirabai, looking more than ever like Puvis de Chavannes' Sainte Geneviève. She promised to wake me just before three o'clock.

I shall never forget that night, the strange mystic beauty of it. Half asleep and wrapped in a fur coat, I followed Mirabai to the Mahatma's cell. It was small and white and cold; he sat on a thin mattress on the floor, enveloped in his "Khaddar," and looked very frail.

CLARE SHERIDAN

We were joined by his Hindu secretary, the lamp was put out, and through the open door came a faint, cold, blue mist. Two Hindus and an English saint chanted the Brahmin hymns. I felt that I was dreaming.

A little before five Mirabai again awakened me; it was the Mahatma's walking hour and reputed the best moment to get him to talk.

It was quite obvious that this life might be beautiful in any other climate, or adapt itself to a less nervously strenuous programme. How the Mahatma was able to sustain his religious asceticism with his London political and business activities can only (I imagine) be explained through spiritual discipline. But I, who had not then attained to any degree of discipline, was completely numbed, mentally, physically and spiritually, through cold, fog and lack of sleep. I was unable to profit by the privilege of pursuing the Mahatma on his early walk. I use the word *pursue* deliberately, for, gathering his Khaddar around him, the Mahatma set forth at such a speed that we had almost to run so as not to lose him in the fog! Behind us, panting and puffing, one heard the two unfortunate detectives whose duty it was to guard or to watch him.

Gandhi knew his way; it skirted a canal. He could have done that walk with his eyes shut. Even though one could not see the canal one could hear the water as it poured through a mill. There was barely room for two abreast and Mirabai pushed me forward: "This is your chance——" I remember vaguely that we talked religion, and he intimated that all those who have a love of truth and sincerity, who have eliminated hatred and bitterness, have an affinity the world over. But it is not necessary really that Gandhi should speak to one in words. Merely to be in his environment raises one consciously on to a higher plane. There would be much to gain from meditating in silence at his side.

CLARE SHERIDAN

I am able to say, in perfect truth, seven years afterwards, when emotion has faded and memory is like a dream, that through knowing Gandhi something was changed in me. Life was just a shade more worth living. Something which, for want of a better word we call Inspiration, had entered in.

GANDHI'S POLITICAL METHOD

*by THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS,
M.A., LL.D., D.C.L.
(House of Assembly, Cape Town)*

It is fitting that I, as an opponent of Gandhi a generation ago, should now salute the veteran as he reaches the scriptural limits of three score years and ten. May the further allotment which the Psalmist grudgingly allows also be his, and may they be years of fruitful service to the world and of a peaceful mind to himself! I join most heartily with the other contributors to this volume in recognition of his great public services and in paying tribute to his high personal qualities. Men like him redeem us all from a sense of commonplaceness and futility, and are an inspiration to us not to be weary in well-doing.

The story of our clash in the early days of the Union of South Africa has been told by Gandhi himself and is well known. It was my fate to be the antagonist of a man for whom even then I had the highest respect. That clash on the small stage of South Africa brought out certain qualities of Gandhi's character which have since become more prominently displayed in his later large-scale operations in India. And they show that while he was prepared to go all out for the causes which he championed, he never

THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS

forgot the human background of the situation, never lost his temper or succumbed to hate, and preserved his gentle humour even in the most trying situations. His manner and spirit even then, as well as later, contrasted markedly with the ruthless and brutal forcefulness which is the vogue in our day.

I must frankly admit that his activities at that time were very trying to me. Together with other South African leaders I was then busily engaged on the task of welding the old colonies into a unified State, of consolidating the administration of the new national structure, and of creating, out of what was left after the Boer War, a new nation. It was a colossal work which took up every moment of my time. Suddenly, in the midst of all these engrossing preoccupations, Gandhi raised a most troublesome issue.

We had a skeleton in our cupboard in the form of what is called the Indian question in South Africa. The Transvaal had made an effort to restrict Indian immigration. Natal had an old tax on Indians intended to induce them to return to India after their period of service on the sugar plantations had been completed. Gandhi tackled this problem, and in doing so showed a new technique—one which he afterwards made world-famous in his political campaigns in India. His method was deliberately to break the law, and to organize his followers into a mass movement of passive resistance in disobedience to the law objected to. In both provinces a wild and disconcerting commotion was created, large numbers of Indians had to be imprisoned for lawless behaviour, and Gandhi himself received—what no doubt he desired—a short period of rest and quiet in gaol. For him everything went according to plan. For me—the defender of law and order—there was the usual trying situation, the odium of carrying out a law which had not strong public support, and finally the discomfiture

THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS

when the law had to be repealed. For him it was a successful coup. Nor was the personal touch wanting, for nothing in Gandhi's procedure is without a peculiar personal touch. In gaol he had prepared for me a very useful pair of sandals which he presented to me when he was set free! I have worn these sandals for many a summer since then, even though I may feel that I am not worthy to stand in the shoes of so great a man! Anyhow it was in that spirit that we fought out our quarrels in South Africa. There was no hatred or personal ill feeling, the spirit of humanity was never absent, and when the fight was over there was the atmosphere in which a decent peace could be concluded. Gandhi and I made a settlement which Parliament ratified, and which kept the peace between the races for many years. He left South Africa to undertake his Herculean task in India and to impress his spirit and personality on the masses of that great country to a degree which has no parallel in recent Indian history. And throughout it all, he was but largely carrying out the methods he had learnt in South Africa in our scrappings over the Indian question. South Africa was indeed a great training school for him, as it has been for other notable men who have from time to time shared our life in this strangely attractive and provocative sub-continent.

I say largely, but not quite. In addition to his old method of passive resistance—now renamed non-co-operation—he developed in India a new technical device of a very disconcerting but effective character. That technique of reform was persuasion by self-starvation. Fortunately we had been spared this development in South Africa where people have a horror of any unnecessary loss of life. In India it has worked wonders and carried Gandhi to successes and heights of achievement which would probably have been unattainable otherwise.

It may be of interest to give closer attention to this

THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS

novel technique—novel at any rate in political warfare. I cannot conceive the Leader of the Opposition in Great Britain starving himself to death in order to convince the Government of the day of the error of their ways. We are here in a strange region, remote from the ways of democracy and indeed of Western civilization. I think the phenomenon is deserving of careful study. I can but direct cursory attention to it here.

It is not so entirely novel to Indian ways of thought and practice. In India it appears to be a recognized practice for the creditor to bring pressure to bear on his dilatory debtor by inflicting suffering, not on the debtor but on himself. Civil imprisonment of the debtor is or has been our Western way of forcing the hand of the recalcitrant debtor. Not so in India: there the creditor will himself go to prison or sit and starve on the doorstep of his debtor in order to soften his heart and open his or his friends' purse. Gandhi adopts this Indian technique and only alters its application and scale. He would sit and starve, if need be to death, on the doorstep of the Government or a recalcitrant section of the community whom he wishes to persuade or rather to coerce to better ways. And like the creditor he succeeds, not by reasoning or persuasion, but by arousing the much deeper-lying emotions of fear, of shame, of repentance, of sympathy, of humanity, and of other feelings below the threshold of conscious thought, which in their mass effect prove much more potent than reasoning or persuasion. The debtor—the opponent Government or community—is morally undermined and finally overwhelmed by this emotional mass effect.

In some ways this technique is not very different from the methods followed by large-scale propaganda in our day. It has the same effect of overwhelming the public mind, not by reason but by play on the emotions, many

THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS

of them of an irrational character. One might fairly conclude that this technique is dangerous and may be abused, just as propaganda to-day is being abused to debauch and poison public opinion in the Western world. Whether the objects in view are worthy or detestable, the method is a dangerous one, as it undermines reason and personal responsibility, and is an invasion of that inner sanctuary of the personality which is the final citadel of all human nature.

Gandhi's technique of self-starvation differs, however, in a very important respect from that of Western propaganda. The performer (if I may call him so) tries to rouse the community to face the situation by the thought and the spectacle of his own suffering. The technique is based on the principle of suffering and the purifying effect of vicarious suffering on the emotions of others. It has the same purifying and ennobling effect which high tragedy has in accordance with the Aristotelean definition.

We touch here not only the Greek notion of tragedy but the deepest springs of religion. In particular the motif of suffering is central to the Christian religion. The Cross remains the symbol of the most significant tragedy in all human history. The Suffering Servant of Isaiah and the Great Sufferer on the Cross, pouring out his soul for his brothers, stir emotions whose dynamic is incomparably greater than that of all reason or rational persuasion. The argument from suffering is and remains the most effective in the world. In the welter of religions in the early Roman Empire the Christian religion won through by suffering, by martyrdom, and not by the arguments of the Apologists; nor was its progress impeded by the current philosophies of that enlightened age. And in the same way the large-scale sufferings which in our day a cruel and brutal inhumanity in Europe is inflicting on those who differ in race or religion or conviction may yet become the dyna-

THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS

mite to explode the great systems now so proudly being reared.

It is this potent principle of suffering on which Gandhi has based his novel technique of reform. He makes himself a sufferer in order to move the sympathy and gain the support of others for the cause he has at heart. Where ordinary political methods of reasoning and persuasion fail, he falls back on this new technique, based on the ancient practices of India and the East. It is a procedure which, as I have said, deserves the attention of political thinkers. It is Gandhi's distinctive contribution to political method.

Let me conclude with one other thought. Many people, even some who sincerely admire him, will differ from some of his ideas and some of his ways of doing things. His style of doing things is individual, is his own, and, as in the case of other great men, does not conform to the usual standards. But however often we may differ from him, we are conscious all the time of his sincerity, his unselfishness, and above all of his fundamental and universal humanity. He always acts as a great human, with deep sympathy for men of all classes and all races and especially for the under-dog. His outlook has nothing sectional about it, but is distinguished by that universal and eternal human which is the hall-mark of true greatness of spirit.

It is curious how in these days of European confusion and decline Asia is steadily moving to the front. Among the greatest men on the public stage of the world to-day are two Asiatics—Gandhi and Chiang-Kai-Shek, both moving immense masses of men along noble lines to a destiny which in essence is one with the high Christian ideal which the West has received but no longer seriously practises.

THE RT. HON. J. C. SMUTS

THE POET'S VERDICT

by RABINDRANATH TAGORE
(Santiniketan, Bolpur, Bengal)

Occasionally there appear in the arena of politics makers of history, whose mental height is above the common level of humanity. They wield an instrument of power, which is almost physical in its compelling force and often relentless, exploiting the weakness in human nature—its greed, fear, or vanity. When Mahatma Gandhi came and opened up the path of freedom for India, he had no obvious medium of power in his hand, no overwhelming authority of coercion. The influence which emanated from his personality was ineffable, like music, like beauty. Its claim upon others was great because of its revelation of a spontaneous self-giving. This is the reason why our people have hardly ever laid emphasis upon his natural cleverness in manipulating recalcitrant facts. They have rather dwelt upon the truth which shines through his character in lucid simplicity. This is why, though his realm of activity lies in practical politics, people's minds have been struck by the analogy of his character with that of the great masters, whose spiritual inspiration comprehends and yet transcends all varied manifestations of humanity, and makes the face of worldliness turn to the light that comes from the eternal source of wisdom.

EDWARD THOMPSON

GANDHI: A CHARACTER STUDY

by EDWARD THOMPSON
(Oxford)

I admit a disability at the outset. I do not know Mr. Gandhi well; and his recent phase, and reports that come from India, fill me with disquiet. Fortunately, he has already done enough to be part of history, and in a series of autobiographical books of often startling frankness, has himself provided the materials for a study of his character and purposes.

He is a Gujarati, one of a race that is unwarlike and has been often overrun and pillaged, especially by the Marathas. His origins are rarely mentioned in the West, which does not understand their significance, but they are rarely forgotten in India. He has laid himself open to the retort (and it is part of his moral courage that he is aware of this, and does not let himself be deflected by awareness) that his emphasis on *ahimsā*, "non-violence," is a badge of his unmartial origins. The Marathas, I think, rarely forget that they are Marathas, and that he is a Gujarati; among them his vogue has been fitful and wavering. It has been the same with the Rajputs, another warlike nation. "To me, as a Rajput," said a Central Indian Prince to me, "the doctrine of *ahimsā* is inconceivable! It is a Rajput's duty to kill and to be warlike!" Nevertheless, *ahimsā* is the core of Mr. Gandhi's teaching, and though he has had to force it upon so many reluctant converts it has been the cause of his remarkable victories. I shall have to return to this, and to show that it is so.

One does not get away entirely from one's race and beginnings, and there may be a debit side sometimes to the fact that he came from an unpolitical and unmartial nation, and from a small and unimportant State inside that

EDWARD THOMPSON

nation. The ideal that the Ruler should be personally accessible to his subjects whenever they suffer oppression has lived on in India. But, until the Governments of the world, and their whole social and financial and political systems, change radically, it seems in practice to belong to a vanished age. It might have been conceivable in the Athens of Pericles, where everyone of any distinction was known by sight and the free population was not large—or in the Porbander (the small Gujarati State) of Gandhi's childhood. Mr. Gandhi's politics are often inadequate to questions that fall outside a village economy—the defence of India, for example, in a world beset with totalitarian Powers. He thinks in terms of small and primitive units, and seems not to see the modern world's complexity (except as something to be dreaded and warded off—how one wishes this were possible!). He is busy always *with the individual*. And while, if you must be in extremes, this is infinitely better than the opposite attitude, which sees men in the mass, as trees from which taxation can be shaken down, as cannon-fodder, and "reserves of manpower" (from which a few thousands or even a few hundred thousands can be shot away or killed out of "economic causes"), yet, if India is to be saved, the piecemeal individual process will have to be supplemented by large-scale planning and action. God has been very good to India, following a Gandhi by a Nehru. The younger man can be trusted to conserve all that is great and effective in his predecessor's work, and yet to have the courage to carry that work into a world that the older man distrusts.

Partly because of this restricted outlook, at the Round Table Conference Mr. Gandhi showed at a disadvantage, and never got on to the plane of his opponents, who envisaged men in groups and masses. He is at a disadvantage to-day, in a world where nation after nation is being

EDWARD THOMPSON

welded into a club of destruction to strike down other nations. His *ahimsā* weapon, which in his hands was so sharp and strong, is blunted. The simile was used, in a discussion in my own house, that it was a pair of scissors, needing two blades, his own and his opponent's. It succeeded in India, because it was used against a Government that—however imperfectly—recognized that the game of insurrection and repression had rules; his enemy had streaks of humanity and liberalism. The Government therefore found itself ultimately helpless, when line after line of Nationalists stood up fearlessly, to be struck down by the *lāthis* of the police, while British spectators were overcome with shame and American journalists hurried off to cable home their indignation. It was a world in which, if you had strength to endure to the end, you were sure to be saved, and to see your cause saved also!

All that world has passed away, and it is hard to be sure that we saw it in operation! Mr. Gandhi has said that, if the Abyssinians had practised strict non-violence, they would have won, and when the scissors simile was used to him (in pre-totalitarian days, when no one even dreamed of the monstrous figures that haunt our contemporary vision) he rejected it. But surely his idea of *ahimsā*, like the long-bow, now belongs to history? If he had been confronting a Fascist or Nazi Power, or if India were to find herself invaded by one of these armies that pitilessly lay waste whole cities from the air and sweep all their prisoners before firing squads, should we not realize its limitations? Is it strange that in the National Congress now there is the sharpest division⁹ of opinion concerning it, and that the young think this weapon is a museum piece, like the arquebuses and scimitars of a bygone day?

All this, however, means only that Mr. Gandhi is a consistent pacifist, and that I am not. I know that a hundred years from now men will still be puzzling over his

EDWARD THOMPSON

personality, although Book Societies will be recommending *The Riddle of M. K. Gandhi*, *The Secret of Mr. Gandhi*, *The Man Who Fought an Empire*, and reviewers will be declaring that this or that biographer has at last "unveiled" his "mystery"!

Ten years ago, at the height of his fame, too much attention was focussed on him as a picturesque figure. This distracted notice from his actions, but served to bring out his lovable ness and naturalness. There is no question that he enjoyed the fun of it all; and he has never been taken in by his own legend. "Your Majesty, I myself was never a Wilkesite," John Wilkes told George III. Mr. Gandhi has never been a Gandhi-ite; he has preserved a cool and slightly contemptuous attitude towards his own sillier entourage, and is well aware that many of his votaries have not helped his cause. Among his engaging personal qualities is impishness, and his sense of humour brings him constant happiness. You get on far better with him if you preserve self-respect, and he does not resent it if you keep the conversation light. He arrogates no dignity to himself (though he possesses plenty), he will "pull your leg" and enjoy having his own pulled in return.

He has a dry suspicion of the imaginative and "literary." He will smilingly dismiss an unwelcome opinion, with "Ah, but you see, you are a poet!"—in a manner that leaves the quite clear impression that what his courtesy implies but forbids him to say outright is, "Ah, but you see, you are a half-wit!" The relations between him and Rabindranath Tagore, men whose mutual respect has been deep and unshaken, yet men utterly unlike each other, have been fascinating to watch. India has watched them for years, and the spectacle has been a considerable part of that country's rich public education! It has ministered to pride to realize that your land possesses two men so great, yet so different and so well aware that each is

EDWARD THOMPSON

essential to the nation-building work that both have at heart!

"He can be *exasperating!*" Every one of us who has had to do with him has said this at one time or another, and said it with affection! He will send a wire that brings a friend or colleague a thousand miles, on presumably important business, and he will break off discussion and use up what may be the only time available, because the exact minute has arrived when he gives his patients enemas! I use a mild example of the kind of thing I mean, because one should always aim at understatement! I watched him once (at the discussion I have mentioned earlier) while for three hours he was sifted and cross-questioned by a group which included the Master of Balliol, Gilbert Murray, Sir Michael Sadler, P. C. Lyon. It was a reasonably exacting ordeal, yet not for one moment was he rattled or at a loss. The conviction came to me, that not since Socrates has the world seen his equal for absolute self-control and composure; and once or twice, putting myself in the place of men who had to confront that invincible calm and imperturbability, I thought I understood why the Athenians made "the martyr-sophist" drink the hemlock. Like Socrates, he has a "daemon." And when that daemon has spoken, he is as unmoved by argument as by danger. I can still hear Lindsay's desperate tones, as he cited Cromwell's appeal to the Presbyterian ministers—"In the bowels of Christ, I beseech you to think it possible that you may be mistaken!"—and added, "Mr. Gandhi! think it *possible* that you may be *mistaken!*" Mr. Gandhi did not think it possible. For, like Socrates, he has a "daemon"; and, when that daemon has spoken, death may thrust his fangs into Mahatma's face, or a whole University bring its arguments, but Gandhi is immovable.

Perhaps his unsurpassed command of English idiom

EDWARD THOMPSON

comes partly from this perfect control over his mind. The hardest thing in our language for a foreigner is our prepositions. I never met an Indian who had mastered them as Gandhi has. I learnt this during the Round Table Conference, when two or three times he asked me to draft some statement for him. If you are a professional writer, you try to be careful about your prepositions, and I admit that I took a deal of trouble over this drafting. Mr. Gandhi would glance over my work, and would make just one subtle prepositional change—you might (if you did not know English from the roots of your mind) think the change was a trifle. But it did its work. Perhaps it left a loophole (and politicians are suspected of liking loopholes). Anyway, it changed *my* meaning into Mr. Gandhi's meaning. And our eyes, as they met and each of us smiled at the other, showed that we both knew that this had happened.

Yes, he is a lawyer; and lawyers can be most exasperating—as the League of Nations discovered when Britain was represented there by lawyers! When revolution comes in any land, and the people take charge of their affairs at last, the first reform is always the execution of all the lawyers. It is often the only reform that subsequent ages do not regret.

And what was the British Government in India to do, when it was confronted by a lawyer, who in his battle with it gradually mastered the subtlest shades of meaning in English words, who not only was without fear or care for self but could not be put out by the most unexpected turn in argument? And, what made it worse, the man's sense of humour made him willing to concede to you his own insignificance, so that you could not strike him through himself! And what made it worst of all was that here was Antaeus again, whose strength was invincible when it touched his Mother Earth! Gandhi rested always

on the patience of the East, its utter indifference, its tested methods of resistance.

As a matter of fact, India's only chance *in those days* was by strict practice of *ahimsā*, "non-violent non-resistance," and it was a flash of inspiration when Gandhi saw this, sooner than anyone else. "*In hoc signo vinces.*" Of course! Granted an opponent who did not expect this kind of attack, who would be bewildered by it, who would vaguely feel that he could not strike down an enemy who refused to strike back, you had found a weapon indeed! *And India, weak and disarmed, had no other!* It is silly to take up bows and arrows against machine-guns, if bows and arrows are all you have! You merely give the enemy justification for using the machine-guns "in self-defence," whereas otherwise he may be ashamed to use them! "Non-violence," however ineffective to-day, did its work in its time.

And with this inspiration, born out of helplessness and desperation, came another. "*Sit dharna!*" the spirit of India whispered. I think it was Rushbrook Williams who first traced Mr. Gandhi's political action to the ancient practice of "*sitting dharna.*" This practice, which was a nuisance in India of John Company days, was one whereby a creditor at an obstinate debtor's door, an aggrieved person at the door of an oppressor or enemy, sat fasting until death or redress released him. If it was death, then the ghost sat on eternally, an implacable shadow, now beyond the reach of appeal or repentance. This was Mr. Gandhi's action, an action magnificently vernacular. He has been, with intervals, sitting *dharna* at the British Empire's threshold for close on forty years. Once or twice we have come very near to having his ghost on our hands. "Non-violent non-co-operation." Young India watched with absorbed interest when Young Ireland handled bomb and revolver, shot from behind hedges and derailed trains. But all India

EDWARD THOMPSON

watched with a more poignant interest yet, when Mac-Sweeney, the Lord Mayor of Cork, hunger-struck until he died. In 1929 an Indian student, accused of a political murder, did the same, and the passage of his body home from the Punjab to Calcutta was a pageant which will not be forgotten. The Alien Government was being fought to the death, with *Indian weapons*. Those weapons had already been imported into the West, and had succeeded there. Witness the Nonconformist Passive Resisters, then the Suffragettes (who had gone one better, by thinking of the hunger-strike—but perhaps they were not strictly “non-violent”), then Ireland. Here was “non-violence,” even unto death!

“He is moral, but not spiritual,” a great Indian once said to me of Gandhi. Another Indian said, “He is *elusive*. But there is no doubt that he is capable of the very highest forms of truth.” I come home to this. He disappointed some who met him in London during the Round Table Conference; they said in surprise, “He is not a saint!” Well, I do not think he is a saint; and, to be frank, I do not care whether he is or not. I think he has been something far harder, and something which the desperate nature of the times through which we have lived has needed far more than it has needed saints. “He is capable of the very highest forms of truth.” He is; he can rise to extraordinary heights of nobility. The whole of that South African struggle, where he was the focus and spearhead (and everything else) of Indian resistance to intolerable injustice, is an episode too great for any praise of mine. And not only was his courage tremendous; so was the man’s generosity. The magnanimity of Indians fills me, every minute of my life, with astonishment. They have shown, as individuals and as a race, that they can rise above resentment, as I the Englishman feel I could never rise above it, if I were in their shoes. Gandhi *ought* to have

EDWARD THOMPSON

hated every white face to the end of his life—yet he did not! Indeed, as Edmund Candler noted long ago, he rather likes Englishmen. Then there came what was called a Zulu rebellion in Natal, which began with the hanging of twelve Zulus, and passed into a ghastly tale of shooting and flogging. Gandhi, to show that he was not anti-British and that he and his fellows were willing to take their share of work when trouble was ablaze, volunteered for ambulance work. By a refinement of stupidity (this is all I will call it) they were given the care of the bodies of Zulus which had been lacerated by whippings inflicted under martial law. It was a good training, if it was meant to harden these Indians to the anticipation of what Governments can do when they are frightened! It did harden them in this way, but not in another; Gandhi kept his belief that the Englishman *can* be touched by reason and an appeal to his sense of fairness. In April 1919, General Dyer shot down nearly two thousand people in the death-trap of that sunken garden at Jalianwala, in Amritsar, where the wounded were left all night to crawl and cry out. There followed the provocation of infamous debates in both British Houses of Parliament, and of the mean agitation that whipped up a subscription of £26,000 to the Dyer Testimonial Fund. Gandhi and Jayakar were deputed to draw up the National Congress's own report on the Punjab disturbances. Detailed and circumstantial evidence (readily believed in the misery and humiliation of the time) was pressed upon them, to show that General Dyer had deliberately "lured" the crowd into the sunken garden, so as to make a slaughter of them. The evidence had behind it the impetus of uncontrollable passion and suffering. Mr. Gandhi brushed it aside, brushed aside the insistence of his own people. "I do not believe it," he said, "and it shall not be set down in the Report."¹ Never was

¹ My informant was M. R. Jayakar.

EDWARD THOMPSON

his self-possession more triumphant; and self-possession in such circumstances is a high moral victory. If you lived through the War, you know how difficult it is to be shaken by indignation and patriotism and yet remain just. Gandhi achieved this, and achieved it under humiliation that has never been the Englishman's experience, that of belonging to a beaten-down nation. This is "the highest form of truth"—truth of action, not mere truth of speech.

My last example is his trial, in 1922, an episode honourable to him and to his opponents—unusual, and perhaps unique, in the high quality of human "decency" that showed in it, and made it, when there was so much to cause conflagration, a revelation of the honesty and fairness on both sides. That trial began a genuine change (I will not say of heart, but) of attitude in the British community in India. They had already learnt to respect Mr. Gandhi, however much he exasperated them, and now they saw, in the dramatic (it was this, without passing into that further phase when we condemn the striking by styling it theatrical) minutes of that trial, the man's queer, ironical, entirely honourable, and magnificently unworldly and valiant spirit. How much more we saw I cannot say. I can speak only for myself, the typical John Bull; I began to see that he challenged, not so much the British dominion, as a thing that many of us longed to dare to challenge, the whole modern world, that has mechanized and arrested human life. His quarrel with us was a deeper and wider thing than we had thought!

He was released early, because of his operation (January 12, 1924) for appendicitis. The Jail Governor offered to let him have in his own ayurvedic physician or any surgeon he chose. Not to be outdone in courtesy, Mr. Gandhi left himself in the Governor's hands, and claimed no special privilege. The surgeon used an electric torch, which fused halfway through the operation; the nurse

EDWARD THOMPSON

held a hurricane lantern till it was finished. Had the patient died, we know what India and the world would have said. Miss Mayo has given a sneering account of this episode, of which Mr. Gandhi speaks as "a sacred" experience, creditable to his jailors, "and, I trust, to myself." It was; and in a world where so many unpleasant things happen, here is something of another kind.

I have no time to speak of his cult of the spinning-wheel, which I have come to see was wise and justified, though it was sometimes taken to absurd extremes, as when he wanted Tagore to do spinning daily. Or of that harmless touch of masochism in him, which makes him, as a penance for wrong done by his countrymen to outcastes or milch cows, deliberately do with his own hands the dirtiest scavenger work he can find, in his outdoor hospital, and drink only goats' milk (as a protest against the cruel *phookā* method of forcing more milk than a cow can really give).

He is a superb judge of other men. His humanity is one of the profoundest things that history has seen. He has pity and love for every race, and most of all for the poor and oppressed. He is genuinely *nishkām*, desireless. All India knows that he regards all men and women equally, his own son being no more to him than the son of a sweeper. He is without fear or care for self. He is humorous, kindly, obstinate, brave. India was fissured and split—cracked, shattered, and patched—as no other folk on the earth's surface. For the first time since Buddha, she knew a stirring that spread to her remotest places, a breath and voice felt and heard everywhere, even though the words were not always understood. The Nationalist Movement has had more eloquent men, more learned men. But one man only who has convinced men and women in India that he is of the same flesh and blood as they are. He has held up a hope before the outcaste; the Dom and

EDWARD THOMPSON

the Hari have begun to dream that they come within the category of human. He has set in action emotions and hopes that are far wider than any political grouping. He has definitely shifted the course of a people's way for the future.

He has done more than even that. I have criticized him as a politician. But, as I have said elsewhere, "he will be remembered as one of the very few who have set the stamp of an *idea* on an epoch. That idea is 'non-violence,' which has drawn out powerfully the sympathy of other lands." It also—and this no one seems to have noticed—set "a reciprocal quality on the British Government's 'repression.' The struggle in India has been accompanied by bloodshed and savagery. Yet, when all has been said by the extreme protagonists of both sides, its conduct justifies a guarded belief that its outcome may be a sane and civilized relationship between the two countries."¹ If that should come to pass, when the insanity now ravaging the world has passed away, then my own country, as well as India, will look on this man as one of its greatest and most effective servants and sons. He has kept the quarrel between England and India what it is in essentials, a quarrel inside a family. Families often behave very badly, but their quarrels are rarely implacable.

¹ Thompson and Garratt, *The Rise and Fulfilment of British Rule in India*, p. 65.

SRIMATI SOPHIA WADIA

THE PATH OF SATYĀGRAHA

by SRIMATI SOPHIA WADIA
(Founder in India and Editor of
The Indian P.E.Z., Bombay)

Gandhiji is a practical mystic whose philosophy of life and whose political programme are at once an inspiration to thousands and a puzzle to millions. While his philosophy of Soul-life can be understood in theory by any intelligent individual, and its principles practised by the ardent and resolute aspirant, his political programme will remain a riddle until he is perceived as a figure evolving very naturally out of the long, long past of India and in a real sense embodying the forces which are moulding its present history.

Present-day India is not a new civilization on an ancient soil, like Iran or Egypt. The living stream of Indian consciousness in the twentieth century is a continuity, the same stream which has been steadily flowing for millennia. Even the results of archæological excavations in India take on a new meaning and come to possess a new value unlike any other finds, except perhaps those in China. For example, the Pyramids speak of the glory of an Egypt that is gone; not so, let us say, Mohenjo-Daro, which is not a relic, but an organism in the living culture of India.

In reality there is no modern India in the sense in which we speak of modern Iran or modern Egypt; it is not modern even in the sense in which Japan is, i.e. the same old people metamorphosed into modernity. Modernized India exists only in large cities and even there but very partially. There is a tendency in a not negligible portion of English-speaking India to "go modern"; that tendency unfortunately seems to be gathering force, though it is being checked by the writings and activities of Gandhiji.

Modernized India will come into existence only when his influence is rejected and his political methods have fallen into desuetude. That would be, for India as well as for the world, an even greater catastrophe than was India's rejection of Buddha's doctrines. That rejection was bad and injurious but did not kill India's culture, though it stemmed its rising tide and deprived her of the opportunity of serving the world at large on as great a scale as she might have done.

It is necessary to view Gandhiji's life activities as a developing and an unfinished chapter of Indian history. Our Indian history has been primarily made by spiritual individualities. Great kingdoms with arts and literature of monumental proportions grew naturally from the roots of spiritual culture embodied and taught by those individualities. For example, the Empire of Asoka and the art of Ajanta are fruits of but a single branch of a giant tree; that branch is Gautama Buddha. There are numerous branches of that tree whose trunk represents the invisible culture of the previous Buddhas, including the Vedic seers and singers; its roots are buried in still more ancient soil known in Pauranik lore as *saka dwipa* and *sveta dwipa*. It is necessary to view Gandhiji as a living central figure on the twentieth-century canvas of Indian history which presents in its background details covering millions of years.

The mighty spiritual individualities who have played the leading role in our history have always been integrated beings. They integrated themselves by disciplining their warring members. The more complete the harmonious fusion of the activity of the hands, the head and the heart, the greater the individuality. Not by outer opulence but by inner enrichment have they served their beloved Motherland. When necessary they have worn a royal garb, as in Rama's case; in another era Siddharta, also a Prince,

exchanged his sceptre for the begging-bowl of the Buddha; both were integrated individualities. There have been others—poets, seers, sages, all of them different in their outer appearance and working in environments which were different, but all of them the same in their inner consciousness—minds enlightened by souls, hearts full of the Tathagata Light. Of them it might be said not so much that they were the makers of Indian history as that they were made by world-history, that is, by the power of the Spirit in the region called Bharatavarsha, described as Karma-bhumi, the "Land of Works." They all served humanity by sustaining India's real nature, her innate property, her spiritual law and order, which are all implicit in the term Dharma. This line of thought may appear fanciful and historically unsound. Occidental scholars complain of the lack of the sense of history in the Indian people of the past; they err in this, because they are looking for that particular type of the historical sense with which they are most familiar. Gandhiji himself has described history as understood and interpreted by Occidental culture in this way:

"History is really a record of every interruption of the even working of the force of love or of the Soul. . . . Soul-force being natural is not noted in history."

In this negative sense our old records are very unhistorical; they deal mostly with actions of the Soul and their emphasis is on moral forces and ideals rather than on mundane matters. The *Puranas* are history in this sense.

The difficulty of the Occidental historian reappears in a slightly altered aspect in the modern politician—British or Western-minded—who finds that Gandhiji is lacking in the political sense; for to the modern politician the political sense expresses itself in one way and in no other. Brahmana sages at the courts of kings and emperors, like Vashistha, the adviser of Dasaratha at Ayodhya, were

politicians of the highest order, but their heirs of to-day would not succeed in gathering sufficient votes to enter a Western parliament.

The so-called inconsistencies and impracticalities of Gandhiji are understood when we see him as a Soul, and when we take into account the fact that he is one who refuses to make compromises between his head and his heart, who declines to go against his own conscience, who views all events not from the mundane standpoint, but as avenues for Soul-learning for himself and of Soul-service of others. He practises his philosophy, he lives up to his principles; and therefore he remains a puzzle of varying bafflement to all who compromise and so remain in a disintegrated state of mental confusion and of moral concessions to the flesh and to the world of the flesh.

If we clearly perceive two facts, of Gandhiji's being (1) neither a politician nor a philosopher nor a theologian, but a spiritual reformer; and (2) one who incarnates within himself the Spirit of India or of Arya-Dharma (Religion of the Noble Soul) and is thus writing the chapter of present-day history, we get the correct perspective of his multifarious activities.

Gandhiji is best known to the world as the political leader of India. No doubt people speak of him as a mystic and a religious man, but often his religion is looked upon as of only secondary importance, and Britishers and even many among his own countrymen err in understanding his statements because they hear and use them as if those statements were made by a patriotic politician. They overlook the significance of his rule that "politics without morality is a thing to be avoided." He is giving a new value to patriotism and to nationalism, which are root-causes of world chaos to-day, when he asserts, "My patriotism is subservient to my religion." He will not harm the enemy of India, because to harm anyone is irreligious.

SRIMATI SOPHIA WADIA

It is therefore necessary that we enquire about the inner religion of Gandhiji. He calls himself a Hindu, but he is such only in the sense that the universal teachings expressed in Hinduism appeal to him most and most directly. He writes:

"Dharma, i.e. religion in the highest sense of the term, includes Hinduism, Islam, Christianity, etc., but is superior to them all. You may recognize it by the name of Truth, not the honesty of expedience but the living Truth that pervades everything and will survive all destruction and all transformation.

"Religion is dear to me; and my first complaint is that India is becoming irreligious. Here I am not thinking of the Hindu and Mahomedan or the Zoroastrian religion but of that religion which underlies all religions. We are turning away from God."

Gandhiji defines God as "an indefinable mysterious power that pervades everything." He explains:

"I do perceive that, whilst everything around me is ever-changing and ever-dying, there is, underlying all that change, a living power that is changeless, that holds all together, that creates, dissolves and re-creates. That informing Power or Spirit is God."

That God is triune—Sat-Chit-Ananda or Truth-Knowledge-Bliss.

"The word 'Satya' (Truth) is derived from 'Sat' which means being. And nothing is or exists in reality except Truth. . . . And where there is Truth, there also is knowledge, pure knowledge. . . . And where there is true knowledge, there is always bliss."

That God is "within every one" and "every man is the image of God," therefore in each one of us there exists Sat-Chit-Ananda—but only partially unfolded, for it is covered over by error and ignorance. By the power of that Deity within ought men to endeavour to live, and

when Gandhiji complains that Indians are turning away from God, he means that they are not trying to live by the Power of God within them. "Man is higher than the brute" and "has a divine mission to fulfil." "We know the earth, we are strangers to the heaven within us."

What is that higher mission of man? To find Truth by right knowledge which alone is capable of bringing lasting bliss. "To find Truth completely is to realize oneself and one's destiny, i.e. to become perfect."

But man has a lower animal nature. Imperfection is therefore stamped on the clay of which man's body is formed. The first necessary step is to recognize the existence of the latent perfection as well as the activity of the enveloping imperfection. Gandhiji puts forward in a telling way the work involved when we come face to face with our dual constitution—divine and demoniac. He says:

"I am painfully conscious of my imperfections and therein lies all the strength I possess, because it is a rare thing for a man to know his own limitations."

Because we do not know specifically our own limitations, we remain blind to the divinity within us. Our weaknesses raise the question of dealing with and defeating them, and naturally that question takes us to the Soul and to the power of the Soul within. It is the conquest of these weaknesses that makes "Life a perpetual triumph over the grave."

Now the technique of overcoming our imperfections so that the latent perfection may become manifest is given by Gandhiji in this injunction: "Develop conscious non-violence that is latent in every one of us." Note the implication—that which is latent has to be made patent by effort. How is this effort to be made?

"If man has a divine mission to fulfil, a mission that becomes him, it is that of Ahimsā (Non-Violence). Standing as he does in the midst of Himsā (Violence) he

can retire into the innermost depths of his heart and declare to the world around him that his mission in this world of Himsā (Violence) is Ahimsā (Non-Violence); and only to the extent that he practises it does he adorn his kind. Man's nature then is not Himsā but Ahimsā, for he can speak from experience his innermost conviction that he is not the body but Atman, and that he may use the body only with a view to self-realization."

But this resolve has to be sustained. When a person retires within, he finds both good and evil. The two minds, Vohu-Mano and Akem-Mano of Zoroastrianism, are at work in him. A man's own conscience will not suffice, though it is an aspect of the Spirit within. Gandhiji rightly says, "Conscience is not the same thing for all." What then shall be man's light to aid his conscience? An infallible Pope? A revealed Scripture? In what may be called a key-passage in his writings Gandhiji says:

"I claim to have no infallible guidance or inspiration. So far as my experience goes, the claim to infallibility on the part of a human being would be untenable, seeing that inspiration too can come only to one who is free from the action of pairs of opposites, and it will be difficult to judge on a given occasion whether the claim to freedom from pairs of opposites is justified. The claim to infallibility would thus always be a most dangerous claim to make. This, however, does not leave us without any guidance whatsoever. The sum-total of the experiences of the sages of the world is available to us and would be for all time to come. Moreover there are not many fundamental truths, but there is only one fundamental Truth, which is Truth itself, otherwise known as Non-Violence. Finite human beings shall never know in its fulness Truth and Love, which is in itself infinite. But we do know enough for our guidance. We shall err, and sometimes grievously, in our application. But man is a self-governing

SRIMATI SOPHIA WADIA

being and self-government necessarily includes the power as much to commit errors as to set them right as often as they are made."

Has Gandhiji made mistakes? All do. But—what is the vital factor in the committing of blunders? All men err, but how many have the power to discern their errors? And more—how many have the courage of will to acknowledge them? One of the signs that Gandhiji is an integrated being is his habit of "candid acknowledgment of his mistakes. Another is his fearless exposure of the foibles of his followers, or the slips of the members of his household, or the weaknesses of the political party to which he belongs. He is not afraid of pointing out their religious degradation to his co-religionists. Why should a man be afraid of calling a powerful imperial government "satanic" when he does not hesitate to expose himself publicly by writing about the satanic forces in his own blood, as he has done in his *Story of My Experiments with Truth*?

Also, in the above key-passage we come upon his conception of self-government. A man governing his own being is the highest type of reformer. This concept is the base of Gandhiji's philosophy. Economic reform, political reform, social reform, religious reform, are but extensions of individual reform. For example, of the most concrete type of reform—the economic—he says:

"Indian economic independence means to me the economic uplift of every individual, male and female, by his or her own conscious effort."

This conscious effort involves man's relationship to the society in which he lives. The nationalistic aspect of this economic problem is set forth in a striking way. He adds:

"Real socialism has been handed down to us by our ancestors who taught, 'All land belongs to Gopal. Where then is the boundary line? Man is the maker of that line and he can therefore unmake it.' Gopal literally means

shepherd; it also means God. In modern language it means the State, i.e. the people. That the land to-day does not belong to the people is too true. But the fault is not in the teaching. It is in us who have not lived up to it."

The relationship between the individual and the society in which he lives and which he affects is a family relationship. "There is no reason to believe that there is one law for families, and another for nations." Therefore a very practical and highly important rule of public action is given thus:

"Every instance of public Satyāgraha should be tested by imagining a parallel domestic case."

In other words, in dealing with public affairs the individual must look upon the entire human kingdom as his own family. What then shall the ideal Grihastha-gentleman, who desires to practise *Noblesse Oblige*, do with thieves, ruffians, parasites and the like? What shall Aryanooble nations do with dictators and haters? The answer is: Make a revolution "without the element of violence in it." Shall a person or a nation allow the bully to walk over him or it? In answering this pertinent question Gandhiji has served and is serving the whole of humanity. How?

The variety of situations which arise is innumerable; even in family relationships the practice of Non-violence requires knowledge. How to handle any particular situation according to the applied science of Satyāgraha? This is no easy matter, as those who have tried it even for a short period will testify. Far more intricate is the task of a nation which plans to live and to thrive on the basis of Non-violence or Satyāgraha. In meeting situations as they arose in South Africa and as they have arisen in India, Gandhiji has been developing the technique of resisting evil with virtue, of meeting the mailed fist with the heart of peace. Not only in known public affairs but in private

and personal life also, week by week, in actual work, Gandhiji has been showing how to turn the Wheel of Satyāgraha, of which his favourite spinning-wheel is but a material manifestation.

The culture of our modern age is not, cannot be, sympathetic to Non-violence or Satyāgraha. But the failure of modern civilization is writ large, and thoughtful reformers acknowledge that if our civilization is to be salvaged, many of its old ways of doing things, its modes and its methods of life, must be abandoned.

What shall such people do?

Begin to study in theory the science of Satyāgraha and, having obtained a clear mental perception, begin to discipline themselves. Three are the forces of evil—not in the world only, but in the individual primarily. *Kāma*—Lust; *Krodha*—Anger; *Lobha*—Greed: these flourish in the world because they thrive among the nations dividing that world. In each nation they create havoc of class- and caste-warfare; but their real root is in the individual. A man cannot be at peace with the world when within himself these forces are active, destroying his own peace, throwing his mind into confusion, hardening his heart against most members of the human kingdom, if not against all.

The central quality which is ever the principle of conduct of every true Satyāgrahi is Courage. Not only is that courage to be used in facing one's own lower nature, but also against the temptations which come from a world where lust is mistaken for love, and greed flourishes as a necessary force in the competition of life; where the fittest to survive are the successful competitors who use the force of wrath, however subtly disguised, against their opponents. At every turn we need the Courage of the Soul that proceeds from our identification with the Spirit within, which is one with the Spirit of the Universe.

SRIMATI SOPHIA WADIA

Not a coward's path is that of a Satyāgrahi. So strongly is this brought out by Gandhiji that it is well that we should quote him on this point, which has confused many Westerners. He has written:

"I would rather have India resort to arms in order to defend her honour than that she should in a cowardly manner become or remain a helpless witness to her own dishonour.

"If we do not know how to defend ourselves, our women and our places of worship by the force of suffering, i.e. non-violence, we must, if we are men, be at least able to defend all these by fighting."

Some time ago, answering some Chinese visitors, Gandhiji pointed out that it was already too late for the Chinese as a nation to organize Non-violence and to resist the evil Japan is pouring into China. The army of peace cannot be built in a day and its soldiers cannot learn the sublime art of resisting evil in as short a time as they can learn the ugly craft of handling a gun. In China it is left only to individuals to practise Non-violence; and if a sufficient number of the Celestial Kingdom begin at once to study and to practise the truly celestial science of Satyāgraha, when the time comes, and it may come any day, they will be able to save the Soul of China. Gandhiji explained that "a nation's culture resides in the hearts and in the Soul of its people. . . . Japan cannot force drugs down unwilling throats at the point of the bayonet."

He told his visitor to say to his people this: "The Japanese cannot corrupt our Soul. If the Soul of China is injured, it will not be by Japan." This is true of every nation; but there are nations, e.g. Britain, which can put their own affairs in order by building up quickly the Army of Peace and can thus become instrumental in saving other peoples. If Britain's armament-building programme sets other peoples following her, why could not her organized

SRIMATI SOPHIA WADIA

efforts at the practice of Satyāgraha also energize others to do the same? Let her organize to walk "the way of peace that comes from a simple and godly life."

GANDHI'S FAST FOR HINDU-MUSLIM UNITY

by THE MOST REV. FOSS WESTCOTT, M.A., LL.D.
(Metropolitan of India and Lord Bishop
of Calcutta)

In responding to the request for a short appreciation of some aspect of the life and work of Mr. M. K. Gandhi, I feel I cannot do better than describe the reasons which led him to undertake a fast of twenty-one days in September 1924 and the results which followed from it.

During the spring and summer of that year, Hindu-Muslim tension had grown in an alarming degree, partly as a result of the Suddhi movement which had been led by Swami Shraddhanand among the nau-Muslims in the neighbourhood of Delhi. This communal friction was a cause of the deepest distress to Mr. Gandhi, with whom, as he said, Hindu-Muslim unity had been his chief concern for thirty years. As one riot succeeded another his distress increased, till on the 17th of September he felt himself called to undertake a fast for twenty-one days. In writing of this, he said, "My penance is the prayer of a bleeding heart for forgiveness of sins unwillingly committed." He thus identified himself with and took responsibility for the sins of which Hindus had been guilty. "To revile one another's religion, to make reckless statements, to utter untruth, to break the heads of innocent men, to desecrate

FOSS WESTCOTT

temples or mosques, is the denial of God." When he announced to his friends his intention, every effort was made to induce him to abandon his fast, but he was adamant, quoting Rama's refusal to swerve from his resolve, cost what it might. His fast commenced on the 18th of September and on the same day Hakim Ajmal Khan, Swami Shraddhanand and Mr. Mohamed Ali addressed a letter to prominent Hindus and Mussalmans and others, both European and India, of every shade of political opinion, inviting them to take part in a Peace Conference to be held at a very early date in Delhi. Nearly three hundred persons, including most of the leaders of both communities, accepted the invitation, for the deep, affectionate esteem in which Mr. Gandhi was held by all sections of India's people, and his value to them as a national asset, moved them to take any action possible to remove the cause of a fast which they feared might endanger his life. He had himself said to his friends, "I have not taken up the fast to die, but I have taken it up to live a better and a purer life for the service of the country and God. If therefore I reach a crisis (of which humanly speaking I see no possibility whatsoever), when the choice lies between death and food, I shall certainly break the fast." The Conference finally commenced its Session on the 26th and was held in the Sangam Theatre. The large gathering was seated on the floor in the open space in front of the stage, upon which hung a somewhat faded drop-scene depicting Christ upon the Cross, while at the side of the stage was an easel upon which was placed a large framed portrait of Mr. Gandhi. Mr. Mohamed Ali, as Chairman of the reception committee, welcomed those present and briefly indicated the purpose of the Conference. Its scope was limited and it was to deal with the religious causes of the communal trouble, though it was recognized that there were political and economic causes as well; those were to be dealt with

FOSS WESTCOTT

later. Pundit Moti Lal Nehru was unanimously elected President of the Conference. Its first business, after some preliminary speeches, was to appoint a "Subjects Committee" of some eighty members, which was to undertake the chief burden of preparing the resolutions after they had been drafted in a rough form by a small committee.

In a message sent by Mr. Gandhi, before the Conference commenced its labours, he urged that what was wanted was heart unity and each must speak the truth as he saw it; even if this involved the desecration of others' places of worship they must say so, and he would honour their honesty, though he would know that in that case there was no peace for his unhappy land.

A resolution put from the Chair, endorsing Mr. Gandhi's principles of absolute freedom of conscience in religion, and the condemnation of the desecration of places of worship and of the persecution of anyone who from conscientious motives changed his religion, and of forced conversions, was carried unanimously.

Before the inauguration of the Conference, we were on all sides reminded that Hindu-Muslim unity would not be effected by passing resolutions, but only by a change of heart, and, looking back over the early days of the discussions, it was just this that, it seemed to me, was gradually effected. When we began in the Subjects Committee to consider the resolutions which the small committee had prepared, a bitterness and tensity of feeling at once became obvious, with which was associated a spirit of deep suspicion. There was a mistrust of professions of good will, and generous advances were treated as means to secure some greater counter-advantages. But by the fifth day a definite change of spirit was in evidence, and when Maulana Abdul Kalam Azad had delivered a speech which by its magnificent eloquence and generous spirit had won unstinted admiration, a questioner, who as I'd him what

FOSS WESTCOTT

concession he hoped to receive in return, was greeted with indignant exclamations from all sides of the House. It was clear that a new spirit of tolerance was replacing the old spirit of bargaining, and differences of belief and custom were coming to be regarded as legitimate and entitled to respect. Early in the discussions it was their rights which the speakers had emphasized, but now a sense of their responsibilities and the obligations which they entailed were in evidence.

On the eleventh day of his fast, Mr. Gandhi's condition gave cause for anxiety, and during the discussion I received an urgent note from Mr. C. F. Andrews to come at once. I thought it right to call on Dr. Abdul Rahman on my way, and he promised to make further tests that evening. This entailed a considerable wait in the house, during which Mr. Gandhi asked Mr. Andrews and myself to sing to him during his evening prayers one of our Christian hymns which had for long been a favourite with him.

Lead, kindly light, amid the encircling gloom
 Lead Thou me on;
The night is dark, and I am far from home,
 Lead Thou me on.
Keep Thou my feet; I do not ask to see
 The distant scene; one step enough for me.

It was a moving experience, with the frail figure reclining on his couch in the subdued light of the room.

The doctor's report, when it came, was reassuring; the disturbing symptoms had definitely decreased, and there was no longer cause for alarm.

The results of the Conference were hailed on all sides with warm approval, though it was generally recognized that the task of welding Hindu-Muslim unity must take time. This was well expressed by one of the many distinguished writers whose messages appeared in the *Statesman*

FOSS WESTCOTT

of Calcutta on "Unity Day," October 8th. "Where political arguments, obvious and cogent, had utterly failed, the religious emotions generated by Mr. Gandhi's fast succeeded. There remains the yet harder task of inducing the millions to practise toleration." That task has not been rendered easier by subsequent political events, which have increased political and economic tension, and the motive with which Mr. Gandhi entered on his fast, to enthronize God in the hearts of all men, must be accomplished if peace is to reign, for only thus can the warring wills of men be brought under the supreme control of the one Will of God.

MAHATMA GANDHI AND AGGRESSIVE
PACIFISM

*by THE REV. JACK C. WINSLOW
(Poona and London)*

I could write much about the personal inspiration which I have derived from the character and teaching of Mahatma Gandhi. To have known him is one of the supreme privileges of my life. But I desire in this brief article to emphasize one point only, viz. that he has shown the world a type of pacifism which can truly take the place of war.

Pacifism, as too often exhibited in the West, cannot effectively supplant the method of war. It is, of course, right in its repudiation of war and its conviction that war only brings further disaster upon victor and vanquished alike. It is right in its advocacy of the way of non-violence as the higher way. But too often Western pacifism suffers from a lack of strong and effective aggression in the face

THE REV. JACK C. WINSLOW

of evil. It too easily degenerates into passivity. Men whose blood is boiling with anger over wrongs that have been committed, and who are thirsting for some way of checking the aggression, regard the pacifist (not entirely without some basis of justification) as sitting complacent and ineffective before such aggression. The way of the pacifist appears to them to hold out no hope of countering, for example, such acts as the Italian invasion of Abyssinia or the measures taken against the Jews⁸ in Germany. This is why Western pacifism, though claiming high moral sanctions, commands no universal or really widespread support, even among sincere Christians. The pacifist is apt to suppose that his way is rejected by multitudes of Christians because the moral demands it makes are too high. Actually it is rejected by many because those demands appear too low. The pacifist seems to many Christians guilty of an indifference to moral wrongs which falls short of the highest quality of righteousness and love. They ask for action which will reflect more closely the relentless antagonism of the Divine Holiness to every form of evil.

It is in this respect that the aggressive pacifism of Mahatma Gandhi shows itself superior to the ordinary pacifism of the West. Gandhi's *Satyāgraha* has in it, indeed, all the element of non-violence which the pacifist demands, and has this element in its highest and most positive form. "The true rendering of the word *Ahimsā* in English," writes Gandhi, "is Love, or Charity." "In its positive form *Ahimsā* means the largest love, the greatest charity." "For me the only means of knowing God is non-violence, *Ahimsā*, Love." To refrain, not only from all violence, but from all ill-will and bitter thought against an opponent, and to seek continually to win him by love and self-suffering, is of the essence of *satyāgraha*. Yet *satyāgraha* has in it, also, a relentlessly aggressive quality. It is the exercise of the greatest measure of "soul-force"

THE REV. JACK C. WINSLOW

within our power in opposition to evil, and it will not rest till it has overcome it, suffering to this end, if need be, even to the point of death.

Regarding the British subjection of India as an evil thing, injurious to his country and to the British themselves, Gandhi set himself with all the might of soul-force to bring the British *rāj* to an end. With no hatred for the foreigner, but only love and goodwill towards him, he was led, nevertheless, by the very principles of his faith, to an uncompromising aggression to the foreign yoke. He did not counsel his fellow-countrymen to sit passively unresisting in face of the moral evils of Western domination. On the contrary, he set himself to break through such "slave-mentality," which he considered to be even lower in the moral scale than forcible resistance; and by his method of non-violent non-co-operation he showed to India a pathway to freedom which was at once defiant of evil and free from hate. It demanded an onslaught upon foreign rule equal in determined intensity to that of a war of violence, yet demanding in those who took part in it the highest measure of self-discipline, self-suffering and love.

This way of *satyāgraha*, it may be noted, comes very close to the way of Christ. Mahatma Gandhi has claimed Jesus Christ as "the prince of *satyāgrahis*." It is true that Christ never set Himself to break the Roman yoke. To Him the sins of His own people and their leaders loomed larger than the evils of foreign domination. But to these sins He showed a relentless antagonism which brought Him eventually to His death, whilst the love which He showed to those guilty of these sins never wavered but rather grew, to the final point of suffering gladly at their hands the extreme penalty, to win and redeem them and all men.

This *satyāgraha* of Christ, learnt from Him through the Sermon on the Mount and through Tolstoy by Mahatma

THE REV. JACK C. WINSLOW

Gandhi (as well as from his own Hindu Scriptures), is, I am convinced, what Europe and the world are needing to-day—not a passive but an aggressive pacifism in face of evils which threaten untold misery to mankind.

The application of this principle in the conditions of Europe to-day is not easy. It would, for example, have been no light or easy task for the leaders of the German and Austrian Jews to have banded their people together in non-violent resistance to the oppressive measures taken against them. It would have meant, almost certainly, martyrdom for some of them. But the moral and spiritual effect in the world of such martyrdom would have produced results of incalculable importance, even as the patient suffering of the German pastors in prison is now doing.

Yet, if the present application of *satyāgraha* is not easy of discernment or of practice, the principle itself is sure beyond all doubt, and holds, in my opinion, the only key which can unlock the door of escape from the madhouse into the sunshine of sanity and peace, for a world increasingly conscious of impending catastrophe.

I have found myself much wondering, of late, whether even now, at an age when he is entitled to lay down his armour and prepare in a sannyasi's quiet for his final release, Mahatma Gandhi may not have one closing task, crowning his whole life's work, yet to perform—to take leadership, here in the West, of those unled millions in all the nations of Europe, who long for a righteous and lasting settlement and peace won without strife or hatred, and show us what we must do and what we must suffer that such peace may be achieved.

H. G. WOOD

REFLECTIONS ON MR. GANDHI'S
LEADERSHIP

by H. G. Wood, M.A., D.D.
(Woodbrooke, Selly Oak, Birmingham)

The weaving of floral garlands is an Indian art and a mere Englishman is likely to fail in attempting to offer a tribute of respect and admiration to a great leader. If he writes with characteristic reserve and sobriety, he will seem to be lacking in genuine appreciation. If he lets himself go in extravagant eulogy, he will seem to be lacking in true sincerity. Yet, however poor and ineffective my offering may be, I cannot refuse the invitation to join in congratulating Mr. Gandhi on attaining his seventieth birthday. It gives me at least an opportunity of saying something of the impression made upon me by the lead he has given to the people of India.

Greatness in history is usually measured by the extent and duration of a man's influence rather than by its character and quality. It is a standard which the historian cannot neglect and with which common sense is apt to be content. Measured by such a standard, the world's great men to-day are the dictators—Hitler, Stalin, Mussolini. The first-named in particular doth bestride our little world like a Colossus. He dominates men's minds and lives to a degree that would be ridiculous, were it not tragic. There is undeniably some elemental greatness in a man whose acts affect the destinies of so many peoples. Yet for the Christian such greatness is neither ultimate nor admirable. In the time of Jesus, Alexander was universally esteemed the Great. His meteoric career as a military genius and imperial ruler gripped men's imaginations and fired their ambitions. Julius Caesar, when quaestor in Spain at the age of thirty-three, was smitten with

H. G. WOOD

remorse at the thought that he had done no great deed though he had reached the age at which Alexander died. Among the nations in the time of Jesus, those who were accounted great were those who subdued vast territories and ruled over many peoples. But Jesus set us other standards. He who would be great among you, let him be your servant. The old idolatries are not yet rooted out of men's hearts, but Napoleon did not bewitch the Europe of the nineteenth century, as Alexander captivated the imagination of the Greco-Roman world. Jesus has stained the glory of the conqueror and exalted the role of the servant. For all who come under the influence of Jesus, true greatness is seen not in those who exercise lordship, but in those who devote themselves to the poor and oppressed. A Father Damien among the lepers, a David Livingstone laying down his life in and for Africa, are recognized as the embodiments of true greatness. Among our contemporaries, genuine enduring greatness will be found in such men as W. T. Grenfell in Labrador, T. Kagawa in Japan, and Albert Schweitzer in the primeval forests of West Africa.

It is the distinction of Mr. Gandhi that he holds his place in both catalogues. He figures alike in the list of those who are politically great and in the list of those who are spiritually great. The two types of greatness do not necessarily coincide and are in fact not easily or often associated. That Mr. Gandhi has exerted an influence on public affairs and on the relations of India and Great Britain, which gives him a unique place in the political history of our time, reflects great credit on the people of India. They have recognized and followed a true leader. The quality of Mr. Gandhi's leadership has lifted the national movement in India to a level above that of the terrible nationalisms of the present day. It constitutes a much-needed and inspiring reaction from the political

H. G. WOOD

immoralism which threatens to engulf Western civilization.

Hitler and Mussolini stand for "unrestricted nationalistic egotism," and for brutal power-politics, naked and unashamed. In pursuit of what they conceive to be the interests of their own folk, they are restrained by no scruples and they acknowledge no binding moral laws. Every nationalist movement tends to run to this extreme, and acts of terrorism and crimes of political assassination have marked the struggle for liberty of most peoples. The cause of Irish independence has been marred by the activities of Irish gunmen, and terrorists degrade every cause they seek to assist. Yet when national feeling runs high it is not easy to remember that there are things a man may not do for his country, and when leaders forget, the rank and file are not likely to be loyal to difficult standards. The Indian nationalist movement has not been free from outrages and excesses, but at least it has had a leader who has set his face against these things. At the moment the German and Italian peoples are led by men whom no disinterested observer can respect and on whose word no one relies. Indian nationalism is still represented by one whose motives are honoured and whose sincerity is not questioned even by those who find at times the movements of his mind difficult to follow or who regard his actual decisions as mistaken. In consequence, the Indian nationalist movement has won a large measure of respect even from those who dislike and oppose it.

The method of non-violent non-co-operation is based on the principle of ahimsā, which plays so large a part in the religious and ethical traditions of India. Mr. Gandhi's essays in the employment of this method have thus reflected a quality of the spirit of India. Ahimsā has never been accepted in the West in the absolute form given to it in Indian thought and life. It is not likely that it will ever be accepted as an absolute, because it appears to exalt the

value of life in general above the value of personality. But this application of the principle of ahimsā in politics has given many in the West a new insight into and a new appreciation of the heart of India.

There is, however, something more in these experiments of Mr. Gandhi's in non-violent non-co-operation than a revelation of the value of a great Indian tradition. They have suggested a new technique in resisting wrongs and in advancing justice. We must not indeed make exaggerated claims for non-violence. The idea is that those who adopt the method accept suffering for themselves and avoid inflicting suffering on others. In practice, it is very difficult to fulfil the second condition. The most obvious form of non-violent non-co-operation is the economic boycott, and it always involves inflicting some measure of suffering on others. Nor may we commend non-violence on the ground that it is likely to be more effective than violence. In a world where some men have erected sadism into a virtue and brutality into a system, the resort to non-violent non-co-operation is likely to result, immediately at least, in apparently futile martyrdom. But when all is said, the methods of non-violent non-co-operation are infinitely cleaner and nobler than the mass iniquities of war. And the challenge of Mr. Gandhi to our world is just this, is there not another way of resisting evil and righting wrongs than the way of brute-force and the terrible weapons of modern warfar? And if there is, are not those who care for humanity bound to seek and follow it? Above all, ought not those, who profess to believe in Christ crucified, to hold themselves committed to it? Mr. Gandhi's lead comes as a challenge and a gleam of hope to a world obsessed by the fear of war and preparations for war.

If Mr. Gandhi stands on a higher level than national leaders like the dictators, his position is due not only to

his recognition of moral principles in the realm of political agitation but also to his being numbered with those servants of the poor and oppressed who are great when measured by Christ's standards. After all, Mr. Gandhi's demand for swaraj has been inspired by the hope of grappling with degrading poverty in India. His main criticism of the British raj is not so much that it is British and alien as that it has neglected the poor. His positive concerns are with the uplift of the manhood of the poor, the reconstruction of village community-life, the reintegration of the outcastes in the social system. In all this Mr. Gandhi ranks with Kagawa and Schweitzer, and he would himself acknowledge that in part at least he draws his inspiration from the same source as they. Here his life and work are clearly in accord with the spirit of Him who was described as the friend of publicans and sinners. On this truer greatness, expressed in his self-sacrificing devotion to the cause of the exploited and oppressed, will rest his more enduring title to fame.

Ahiṁsā, the refusal to injure life, and satyāgraha, the reliance on soul-force, are noble principles and they have inspired some magnificent essays in a new way of political activity. But neither principle reaches its true expression and full meaning until it is merged in the forgiveness of sins. The true foundation of politics, of a sound national life and of a genuine international order must be sought in a readiness to acknowledge our transgressions and in a willingness to forgive those who trespass against us. Mr. Gandhi's satyāgraha comes very close to this practice of forgiveness, yet it is not its complete embodiment. More by accident than conscious design, the destinies of India and Great Britain have been strangely linked for nearly two centuries. In the British record there is much that needs to be forgiven. The relations between the peoples of India and the British have been poisoned by Imperialism,

H. G. WOOD

and perhaps only a complete severance of the connection can dispel the poison. And clearly the time has come when India must decide her own destiny under leaders of her own choosing. If indeed we must part, can we not part in the spirit of forgiveness and forbearance? And if we, Indians and British alike, believe sincerely and practically in the forgiveness of sins, need we part at all? If British Imperialism and non-violent non-co-operation could both disappear and give place to a sincere and cordial partnership between India and Great Britain, between East and West, what an encouragement it might bring to a world sick and tired of national egotism! Nor can I conceive any better way of celebrating Mr. Gandhi's seventieth birthday or of thanking God for his service to his people and to mankind than the birth of that spirit of forgiveness in the hearts of both peoples which might issue in true reconciliation and enduring friendship.

GANDHI—AFTER FORTY-SEVEN YEARS

*by SIR FRANCIS YOUNGHUSBAND,
K.C.S.I.
(London)*

Mahatma Gandhi is now renowned throughout the world—and renowned not for creating an atmosphere of fear and suspicion such as drives nations into a fierce struggle for supremacy in arms but for putting courage into his own countrymen and leading them along the lines of moral suasion. But when I first knew him he was just the ordinary courteous English-educated young man, not one wit different from thousands of other Indians who come to Europe. He was under thirty and, dressed in European

SIR FRANCIS YOUNGHUSBAND

clothes like the rest, had nothing noteworthy about him.

Yet even then he was beginning to show that grit and grim pertinacity of purpose, and above all that wonderful compassion for the oppressed, which have only increased and intensified in the forty-seven years since we first met in Durban in South Africa. Indian immigration to Natal was then the burning question. Natal was building itself up as a flourishing colony. It was prepared to admit some but not an unlimited number of Indians. It had been founded by South Africans and it wanted to keep itself predominantly South African. When therefore Indians began to arrive in what would soon be overwhelming numbers the Natalians determined to restrict them. This matter was capable of adjustment. What, however, caused the Indians deep resentment was the indignity with which they were treated. Rich and poor, cultured and uneducated, were all classed together as "coolies." Mr. Gandhi was a "coolie." Rich merchants were "coolies." All Indians were "coolies," just as in China all Europeans were "foreign devils."

Young though he then was, Mr. Gandhi had made himself the leader of the Indian community in championing the rights of Indians. He was living in a well-furnished English villa in Durban, and at a dinner to which he invited me as *Times* Correspondent I found him to be "a particularly intelligent and well-educated man." But it took a good deal more than mere intelligence and education to accomplish what he afterwards did. The race antagonism rampant in South Africa was then terrific. Antagonism between Boer and British, between South Africans and the negro races, and between British and Indians. And that a young Indian lawyer should be able to stand up against it showed a courage and a character which were of far more avail than any amount of intellectual education.

By his sacrifice of a lucrative career, by his readiness

SIR FRANCIS YOUNGHUSBAND

to undergo imprisonment and ignominy in championing Indian rights, he was able to win the admiration and in the end the adoration of his fellow Indians.

But it was in his own country that he was destined to do his greatest work. What he had done for Indians in South Africa had shown that he was a leader and a champion—and when he gave up South Africa and returned to India he found there still greater scope for his activities. His country was governed by a foreign race. He would have Indians rule India. Indians themselves were divided into two great communities—the Hindu and the Muslim. He would join them in one India. In his own Hindu community there were great social evils—the condition of the depressed classes, the position of women, the poverty of the villages. All these he would reform, but reform from within.

He dared to challenge Government itself and suffered imprisonment for breaking its laws. He fasted to the verge of death. He toured the whole country. He penetrated to the most remote districts. He lived the life of the people—even among the untouchables and almost as one of themselves. Till now his life of self-sacrifice for his country has triumphantly made itself felt. His personality, his patriotism, his humanity have told. He is revered as a saint by the Indians. His principle of moral suasion rather than use of force has won through. He has made his country respected.

We British will always hope that India may remain within the Empire. But I for one hope that it will be of her own accord. With that respect which she has won for herself should she be treated.

SIR ALFRED ZIMMERN

PATRIOTISM AND PUBLIC SPIRIT

by SIR ALFRED ZIMMERN, M.A.
(Professor of International Relations)
(University of Oxford)

India has been much influenced by the political thought of Europe. Yet is not Europe—the Europe of 1939—the most politically backward of all the five Continents—with the possible exception of Africa? Are not the two distinctly political values—the two standing criteria of political well-being—Justice and Liberty, being trodden underfoot over large parts of Europe to-day? And is not the contempt in which they are held by the rulers of many European States, both great and small, in part—indeed, in large part—a reflection of the theories and the teaching of European political thinkers? Does not this suggest that India should look with a critical eye upon the political ideas which are wafted to her by the West wind blowing from the European peninsula?

"Ninety per cent of mankind," said President Roosevelt a year or two ago, "desire peace." The figure is probably an understatement. Why, then, is the world in a turmoil? Why cannot the peaceable ninety per cent impose their will on the turbulent ten per cent, who, as is the way with the turbulent, are not likely to be in close or cordial association in their bellicose designs?

The answer is *wrong thinking*. The ninety per cent no doubt have many faults. Some of them are lazy, others are cowardly, most are selfish. But these faults, some of which cancel themselves out, would not have had such disastrous results as we are witnessing if, behind them all, there was not a state of *intellectual confusion*. It is this that paralyses the attempts to form a unity among the so-called friends of Peace. It is that that enables the turbulent few

SIR ALFRED ZIMMERN

to seize and keep the initiative and causes the ninety per cent to play so despicable a role.

If we reduce the political problem of to-day to the dimensions of a single city—say London or Delhi—we can easily see what is the right method for dealing with the type of man who is just now keeping Europe in a turmoil. Every citizen would regard such a man as Public Enemy No. 1, and most able-bodied men would be ready to place themselves at the disposal of the authorities responsible for public order. The criminal intentions of the ten per cent would be checkmated by the public spirit of the remainder of the community.

Why is the same procedure not effective on the wider scale of the European Continent? Why do we see small States living in terror and some of them ruthlessly wiped off the map?

The answer is because there is not enough *public spirit* in the present-day world and, more especially, in Europe.

But are not Europeans, almost without exception, very patriotic? Are they not ready, *en masse*, to die for their respective countries? Did they not actually do so, in vast numbers, a generation ago?

Yes, but *public spirit* is not the same thing as *patriotic spirit*. Banditry in London or Delhi is put down by the public spirit of the civic community. Does such public spirit exist in the world as a whole, or in Europe? This is another way of asking whether there is, in fact, a world-community or even a European community.

Once the question is put in this form it is clear that the answer must be in the negative. The bandits are able to pursue their depredations because, although each individual householder is *patriotic*—prepared to die to defend his own house and family and property, there is an absence of public spirit in the city as a whole. Thus the bandits can proceed at leisure from house to house until

they⁴ are gorged with booty. Then they too may discover that, in spite of the success of their short-range calculations, there is something wrong about their general plan. For, in the twentieth-century world, rulers cannot maintain themselves by booty. They cannot govern indefinitely by anti-social means. They cannot ignore the elements of confidence, credit and interdependence.

But we need not trouble ourselves about the wrong political thinking of the bandits. That will become clear enough before long through the inexorable movement of events. It is the political thinking of their victims which concerns us.

There are two reasons why the individual householders cannot bring themselves to think and to act as citizens. One is rooted in custom and the other in conscious thought.

Belgians are not *accustomed* to thinking of themselves as living in the same city as Dutchmen. Holland and Belgium are two independent countries. Every Dutchman is accustomed to think in terms of Holland and every Belgian in terms of Belgium.

In this case the custom is not of very long standing: for the Kingdom of Belgium is hardly a century old. But the very fact that it was brought into existence in the nineteenth century—that is to say, just at the time when the Industrial Revolution seemed to be establishing a world-wide system of interdependence—testifies to the strength of the desire to cling to small units, to live, as it were, by one's own fireside.

I have used the word "desire." I might have used the word "instinct." There is indeed a force lying deep in men's nature—in the nature of all but rare exceptions among mankind—which draws together like and like in small communities and sets up a barrier against what is strange or, as we say, "foreign." This is the great *psychological* obstacle, which is also (because it is inherited) a

SIR ALFRED ZIMMERN

biological obstacle, to the development of public spirit in a large-scale world. It is psychologically and biologically easy to be *patriotic*, if the unit is small enough. Patriotism is *congenial*. It is difficult to be public-spirited. World-mindedness is an *uncongenial* attitude.

So much for the difficulty of Custom. Let us now turn to the other difficulty, the more purely intellectual obstacles to public spirit on a larger scale.

The essence of the trouble in this field is that the political doctrines of present-day Europe—the doctrines on which the statesmen and citizens of Europe have been nourished—are out of date. They no longer correspond with the conditions of the age. There is nothing final or sacred about any political doctrine. All formulations of political principle are no more than applications to existing circumstances of the great underlying political values, Justice and Freedom. Now, it is the misfortune of present-day Europe that the formulations which sway the minds and hearts of its peoples to-day are inappropriate to the actual situation. They date from a period when each individual political unit could afford to be self-regarding and indeed, to a considerable extent, economically self-sufficing. The term "sovereignty," which is still dear to the lips of European statesmen and parliamentarians, dates from the sixteenth century. It was novel and indeed revolutionary then. It fitted the conditions of that age. It does not fit those of to-day.

The other element in the complex sentiment of European patriotism—attachment to the *nation*—is not so old. In its present European form it dates back no further than the last quarter of the eighteenth century. It was a few years before the French Revolution that political thinkers began to identify the State and the Nation. It was the French Revolution which clinched that identification and caused it to become the current and orthodox doctrine

SIR ALFRED ZIMMERN

of the party of "Progress" throughout Europe. That it was wholly inappropriate to the conditions of a continent where nations live inextricably intermingled and where some of the most vigorous nations number no more than a few million inhabitants mattered nothing to the theorists of the Nation-State. Thus the European street of to-day consists of a strange conglomeration of mansions and cottages. We call the mansions "Great Powers" and the cottages "Small Powers." But those who dwell in them are all equally in need of protection. They all need a common police force and a common fire brigade—not to speak of a common highway.

They will not secure them until they have developed a civic consciousness. They are beginning to develop this to-day under the stress of suffering in some streets, and of anxiety in all.

A civic consciousness is essential as a basis for life in the twentieth-century world.

Are not great areas like North America and India further advanced than Europe in the realization of this?

If so, it is because they have either, as in North America, grown up under more modern conditions or else, as in India, benefited by the teaching of men whose thought moved habitually in a world larger and loftier than that of the parish, the province or the diplomatic ante-chamber. If Mahatma Gandhi has become one of the great figures of our generation, it is because he is for millions, within and beyond the confines of India, the living symbol of the partnership of two powerful ideas too often divorced or even regarded as contradictory—the idea of public duty contained in the term "All India" and the idea of human brotherhood exemplified in his labours for the underprivileged and the downtrodden. Thus can the dauntless spirit of one frail mortal breathe new meanings into the familiar watchwords of Freedom and Justice.

ARNOLD ZWEIG

THANKS TO GANDHI

by ARNOLD ZWEIG
(Haifa, Mt. Carmel,
Palestine)

When we emerged from the war, boundless longing filled the world. There was to be an end of the madness of bloodshed and the drunkenness which proceeded from it and the frenzy of force. . . . Never had the spirit a greater chance, so it seemed, to assume the conduct of public affairs. The world was to be more just, more tolerant, better, more humane. In the highly civilized countries of Central Europe especially, in Germany, in Czechoslovakia, in Austria and Poland this, at least, was to be the fruit of the endless suffering. If the colossal sacrifice of blood could not be paid for with a radical transformation of society, as in the case of Russia, at least we were to finish with the epoch of force and henceforth reckon upon goodwill.

Then rose the star of Gandhi. He showed that a doctrine of non-violence was possible. It seemed given him to shape human society according to his teachings, in fact upon the basis that Tolstoy and Prince Kropotkin had already laid in Czarist Russia from the old doctrines of Christianity. In Germany also were representatives of such convictions. Men like Kurt Eisner and Gustav Landauer, Carl von Ossietzky, Erich Mühsam and Theodor Lessing sought nothing else. Could they fail in Germany when Gandhi succeeded in India?

Now we know the upshot of the attempt. The opponents of force, whose names we have reverently recorded above, lie one and all under the turf, violently done to death, even when, as in Ossietzky's case, tuberculosis took the place of the assassin's bullet. These murderers themselves,

however, enjoy the honour and glory, as for instance the assassins of Rathenau or those who instigated the murder of Matteotti: where once a premature spirituality reigned, there now sprawls on the throne the glorification of force, its worship and perpetuation. Following a false interpretation of nature and of natural things, a one-sided interpretation of the so-called struggle for existence and the selection which it was supposed to produce, pyramids of a new Chenghis Khan are piled up and poisoning year by year the souls of new school curricula with their doctrines, which were already false when Hammurabi compiled his code in Mesopotamia.

We need not here appeal to modern biology in order to show that the doctrines of the force worshipper are false and their interpretation of nature erroneous. To-day we would merely congratulate Gandhi upon the fact that he was born and lives in India, and has to deal with Englishmen and not with Central Europeans. For no respect for his humanity could be extorted from the animals who reign there to-day. We, however, gaze across at him with mournful and unenviable gratitude. Twenty years ago we took the halo that encircled him for the dawn of our new age. To-day we wonder whether it was not the dusk of that age which ended with the world war and which was followed by the wildest epoch of barbarism we could ever conceive. Even in the places where the Jewish prophets and the sublime founder of Christianity lived and roamed, terror reigns to-day—the shedding of the blood of the unarmed and the weak, and the cult of brutality as a political weapon. Perhaps an era of the slaughtering of a peaceful population, such as the Great Powers are tolerating to-day in Spain and in China, is in store for the countries of the Mediterranean. Perhaps sheer delight in the bomb, which seized the Italian airmen in Abyssinia, has already encroached upon the whole circle

ARNOLD ZWEIG

of civilization which the proud eighteenth or nineteenth century created and led to victory in Europe. We do not know. But we, who put our strength in words, and whose lives are spent without having to resort to force, lift up our voices to greet the Mahatma across the ocean, and to thank him for confirming us in our errors and for bringing our epoch to perfection through his figure and through his life: our errors, as if Europe in the twentieth century were capable of imitating such pure doctrines and producing similar men to India and the immense empire under British rule which once saw the days of Gautama Buddha. For in the face of world history it will always be better to have followed the errors of civilization than the victorious gospels of the dictators, their myrmidons, and the army of slaves who lick their boots. But Gandhi, at seventy, feels himself sustained by the best forces which the race of men has ever produced, and is unwearied in completing what he began with his life. Of our discipleship he is sure.

EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

(i)

*From THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT HALIFAX,
M.A., D.C.L.
(Foreign Office, London)*

I wish I could have accepted your invitation to write an article for the book which you are preparing on Mr. Gandhi, and which will be eagerly read by all who know, or wish to know more of, modern India. But I am afraid pressure of work makes it impossible for me to do this.

In a way, and to a degree, quite unprecedented, the strength and character of the national movement have been embodied in the person of Mr. Gandhi, whose devotion to ideals, and readiness to impose upon himself any sacrifice that he deemed necessary, have secured for him a unique position in the hearts of his fellow-countrymen.

I shall always remember the days when I worked very closely with him in a common attempt to find the way of reconciliation. Whatever may, at any time, have been the differences dividing his thought and my own, I have never failed to recognize the deep spiritual force by which he is moved, and which has always led him to count no sacrifice too great for the causes in which he believes.

EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

(ii)

*From UPTON SINCLAIR
(Pasadena, California)*

I am very happy indeed to join with you and others in expressing my great admiration for M. K. Gandhi's personality and work. I do not agree with him in all of his ideas, and it is hardly to be expected, since we live on opposite sides of the world, but his noble spirit and warm human kindness have endeared him to all humanitarians throughout the world.

(iii)

*From ARTHUR H. COMPTON, Ph.D., LL.D.
(Professor of Physics, University of Chicago)*

If you have an opportunity, I wish you would extend to Mr. Gandhi my high appreciation of what his life has meant to the world. He has helped the people of India to find their souls in an age when it is becoming more urgently necessary than ever before that we should find a way of solving vital human problems by methods of peace. Mr. Gandhi has been a pioneer in showing how these more peaceful methods may be effective.

APPENDIX

(*Extracts from Mahatma Gandhi's Writings and Speeches*)

I

HINDUISM

I call myself a Sanatani Hindu, because:

- (1) I believe in the Vedas, the Upanishads, the Puranas and all that goes by the name of Hindu scriptures, and therefore in avatars and rebirth;
- (2) I believe in the Varnashrama Dharma in a sense, in my opinion, strictly Vedic, but not in its present popular and crude sense;
- (3) I believe in the protection of the cow in its much larger sense than the popular;
- (4) I do not disbelieve in idol worship.

The reader will note that I have purposely refrained from using the word divine origin in reference to the Vedas or any other scriptures. For I do not believe in the exclusive divinity of the Vedas. I believe the Bible, the Koran and the Zend Avesta to be as much divinely inspired as the Vedas. My belief in the Hindu scriptures does not require me to accept every word and every verse as divinely inspired. Nor do I claim to have any first-hand knowledge of these wonderful books. But I do claim to know and feel the truths of the essential teaching of the scriptures. I decline to be bound by any interpretation, however learned it may be, if it is repugnant to reason or moral sense. I do most emphatically repudiate the claim

APPENDIX

(if they advance any such) of the present Sankaracharyas and Shastris to give a correct interpretation of the Hindu scriptures. On the contrary I believe that our present knowledge of these books is in a most chaotic state. I believe implicitly in the Hindu aphorism, that no one truly knows the Shastras who has not attained perfection in Innocence (Ahimsā), Truth (Satya) and Self-control (Brahmacharya) and who has not renounced all acquisition or possession of wealth. I believe in the institution of Gurus, but in this age millions must go without a Guru, because it is a rare thing to find a combination of perfect purity and perfect learning. But one need not despair of ever knowing the truth of one's religion, because the fundamentals of Hinduism, as of every great religion, are unchangeable and easily understood. Every Hindu believes in God and His oneness, in rebirth and salvation. But that which distinguishes Hinduism from every other religion is its cow protection, more than its Varnashrama.

Varnashrama is, in my opinion, inherent in human nature and Hinduism has simply reduced it to a science. It does attach to birth. A man cannot change his Varna by choice. Not to abide by one's Varna is to disregard the law of heredity. The division, however, into innumerable castes is an unwarranted liberty taken with the doctrine. The four divisions are all-sufficing.

I do not believe that inter-dining or even inter-marriage necessarily deprives a man of his status that his birth has given him. The four divisions define a man's calling, they do not restrict or regulate social intercourse. The divisions define duties, they confer no privileges. It is, I hold, against the genius of Hinduism to arrogate to oneself a higher status or assign to another a lower. All are born to serve God's creation, a Brahman with his knowledge, a Kshatriya with his power of protection, a Vaishya with his commercial ability, and a Shudra with bodily labour.

APPENDIX

This, however, does not mean that a Brahman, for instance, is absolved from bodily labour or the duty of protecting himself and others. His birth makes a Brahman predominantly a man of knowledge, the fittest by heredity and training to impart learning to others. There is nothing, again, to prevent the Shudra from acquiring all the knowledge he wishes. Only, he will best serve with his body and need not envy others their special qualities for service. But a Brahman who claims superiority by right of knowledge falls and has no knowledge. And so with the others who pride themselves upon their special qualities. Varnashrama is self-restraint and conservation and economy of energy.

Though, therefore, Varnashrama is not affected by inter-dining or inter-marriage, Hinduism does most emphatically discourage inter-dining and inter-marriage between divisions. Hinduism reached the highest limit of self-restraint. It is undoubtedly a religion of renunciation of the flesh so that the spirit may be set free. It is no part of a Hindu's duty to dine with his son. And by restricting his choice of a bride to a particular group, he exercises rare self-restraint. Hinduism does not regard a married state as by any means essential for salvation. Marriage is a fall even as birth is a fall. Salvation is freedom from birth and hence death also. Prohibition against inter-marriage and inter-dining is essential for a rapid evolution of the soul. But this self-denial is no test of Varna. A Brahman may remain a Brahman, though he may dine with his Shudra brother, if he has not left off his duty of service by knowledge. It follows from what I have said above that restraint in matters of marriage and dining is not based upon notions of superiority. A Hindu who refuses to dine with another from a sense of superiority misrepresents his Dharma.

Unfortunately to-day Hinduism seems to consist merely in eating and not eating. Once I horrified a pious Hindu

APPENDIX

by taking toast at a Mussalman's house. I saw that he was pained to see me pouring milk into a cup handed by a Mussalman friend, but his anguish knew no bounds when he saw me taking toast at the Mussalman's hands. Hinduism is in danger of losing its substance, if it resolves itself into a matter of elaborate rules as to what and with whom to eat. Abstemiousness from intoxicating drinks and drugs and from all kinds of foods, especially meat, is undoubtedly a great aid to the evolution of the spirit, but it is by no means an end in itself. Many a man eating meat and with everybody, but living in the fear of God, is nearer his freedom than a man religiously abstaining from meat and many other things, but blaspheming God in every one of his acts.

The central fact of Hinduism, however, is cow-protection. Cow-protection to me is one of the most wonderful phenomena in human evolution. It takes the human being beyond his species. The cow to me means the entire sub-human world. Man through the cow is enjoined to realize his identity with all that lives. Why the cow was selected for apotheosis is obvious to me. The cow was in India the best companion. She was the giver of plenty. Not only did she give milk, but she also made agriculture possible. The cow is a poem on pity. One reads pity in the gentle animal. She is the mother to millions of Indian mankind. Protection of the cow means protection of the whole dumb-creation of God. The ancient seer, whoever he was, began with the cow. The appeal of the lower order of creation is the gift of Hinduism to the world. And Hinduism will live so long as there are Hindus to protect the cow.

I can no more describe my feeling for Hinduism than for my own wife. She moves me as no other woman in the world can. Not that she has no faults. I dare say she has many more than I see myself. But the feeling of an indis-

APPENDIX

soluble bond is there. Even so I feel for and about Hinduism with all its faults and limitations. Nothing elates me so much as the music of the *Gītā* or the *Ramayana* by Tulasidas, the only two books in Hinduism I may be said to know. When I fancied I was taking my last breath, the *Gītā* was my solace. I know the vice that is going on to-day in all the great Hindu shrines, but I love them in spite of their unspeakable failings. There is an interest which I take in them and which I take in no other. I am a reformer through and through. But my zeal never takes me to the rejection of any essential thing of Hinduism. I have said I do not disbelieve in idol worship. An idol does not excite any feeling of veneration in me. But I think that idol worship is part of human nature. We hanker after symbolism. Why should one be more composed in a church than elsewhere? Images are an aid to worship. No Hindu considers an image to be God. I do not consider idol worship a sin.

It is clear from the foregoing that Hinduism is not an exclusive religion. In it there is room for the worship of all the prophets of the world. It is not a missionary religion in the ordinary sense of the term. It has no doubt absorbed many tribes in its fold, but this absorption has been of evolutionary, imperceptible character. Hinduism tells everyone to worship God according to his own faith or Dharma, and so it lives at peace with all the religions.

That being my conception of Hinduism, I have never been able to reconcile myself to untouchability. I have always regarded it as an excrescence. It is true that it has been handed down to us from generations; but so are many evil practices even to this day. I should be ashamed to think that dedication of girls to virtual prostitution was a part of Hinduism. Yet it is practised by Hindus in many parts of India. I consider it positive irreligion to sacrifice goats to Kali and do not consider it a part of

APPENDIX

Hinduism. Hinduism is a growth of ages. The very name, Hinduism, was given to the religion of the people of Hindusthan by foreigners. There was no doubt at one time sacrifice of animals offered in the name of religion. But it is not religion, much less is it Hindu religion. And so also it seems to me, that when cow-protection became an article of faith with our ancestors, those who persisted in eating beef were excommunicated. The civil strife must have been fierce. Social boycott was applied not only to the recalcitrants, but their sins were visited upon their children also. The practice which had probably its origin in good intentions hardened into usage and even verses crept into our sacred books giving the practice a permanence wholly undeserved and still less justified. Whether my theory is correct or not, untouchability is repugnant to reason and to the instinct of mercy, pity or love. A religion that establishes the worship of the cow cannot possibly countenance or warrant a cruel and inhuman boycott of human being. And I should be content to be torn to pieces rather than disown the suppressed classes. Hindus will certainly never deserve freedom nor get it, if they allow their noble religion to be disgraced by the retention of the taint of untouchability. And as I love Hinduism dearer than life itself, the taint has become for me an intolerable burden. Let us not deny God by denying to a fifth of our race the right of association on an equal footing.

(From *Young India*, October 6, 1921.)

APPENDIX

II

THE PLACE OF JESUS

For many years I have regarded Jesus of Nazareth as one among the mighty teachers that the world has had, and I say this in all humility. I claim humility for this expression because this is exactly what I feel. Of course, Christians claim a higher place for Jesus of Nazareth than I, as a non-Christian and a Hindu, am able to feel. I purposely use the word "feel" instead of "give," because I consider that neither I nor anybody else can possibly arrogate to himself the claim of *giving* a place to a great man.

For the great teachers of mankind have not had their places *given* to them. That place has belonged to them as a matter of right, as a matter of service; but it is the privilege of the lowest and humblest amongst us to *feel* certain things about them. The relation between ourselves and the great teachers is somewhat after the style of the relation between wife and husband. It would be a terrible thing, a tragic thing, if I were to argue out intellectually for myself what place I was to give to the wife of my heart. It is not, indeed, a matter of my *giving* at all. She takes the place that belongs to her as a matter of right in my heart. It is a matter purely for feeling. Thus I can say that Jesus occupies in my heart the place of one of the great teachers who have made a considerable influence on my life.

I say to the seventy-five per cent of Hindus receiving instruction in this college that your lives also will be incomplete unless you reverently study the teaching of Jesus. I have come to the conclusion in my own experience that those who, no matter to what faith they belong, reverently study the teaching of other faiths, broaden instead of narrowing their own hearts. Personally I do not regard any of the

APPENDIX

great religions of the world as false. All have served to enrich mankind, and are now even serving their purpose. A liberal education should include, as I have put it, a reverent study of all other faiths.

The message of Jesus is contained in the Sermon on the Mount, unadulterated and taken as a whole. Even in connection with the Sermon on the Mount my own humble interpretation of the message is in many respects different from the orthodox. When I was prematurely discharged from jail, C. F. Andrews, than whom I do not own on this earth a closer friend, showed me a letter addressed by the bishops to their flock. It may be presumptuous for me to say so, but I did not agree with their interpretation of Christ's words.

One's own religion is after all a matter between oneself and one's Maker. But if I feel impelled to share my thoughts with you, it is because I want to enlist your sympathy in my search for truth, and because so many Christian friends are deeply interested in my thoughts on the teachings of Jesus and wish to know what place I give to Jesus in my heart.

If, then, I had to face only the Sermon on the Mount and my own interpretation of it, I should not hesitate to say, "Oh yes, I am a Christian." But I know that at the present moment if I said any such thing I would lay myself open to the gravest misinterpretation.

But negatively I can tell you that to my mind much of that which passes for Christianity is a negation of the Sermon on the Mount. Please mark my words carefully. I am not at the present moment speaking especially of Christian conduct; I am speaking of Christian belief, of Christianity as it is understood in the West. I am painfully aware of the fact that conduct everywhere falls far short of belief. Therefore I do not say this by way of criticism. I know from the treasures of my own experience

APPENDIX

that, although I am every moment of my life trying to live up to my professions, nevertheless my conduct falls short of these professions. Far therefore be it from me to say this in a spirit of criticism. But I am placing before you my fundamental difficulties with regard to the appearance of Christianity in the world and the formulation of Christian beliefs.

There is one thing which came forcibly to me in my early studies of the Bible. It seized me immediately when I read one passage. The text was this: "Seek ye first the Kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all other things will be added unto you." I tell you that if you will understand, appreciate, and act up to the spirit of this passage, then you will not even need to know what place Jesus, or any other teacher, occupies in your heart or my heart. If you will do this moral scavenger's work, so as to clean and purify your hearts and get them ready, you will find that all these mighty teachers will take their places without any invitation from us. That, to my mind, is the basis of all sound education. The culture of the mind must be subservient to the culture of the heart. May God help you to become pure!

When I began as a prayerful student to study Christian literature in South Africa in 1893, I asked myself again and again, "Is this Christianity?" And I could only say, "No, no. Certainly this that I see is not Christianity." And the deepest in me tells me that I was right; for it was unworthy of Jesus and untrue to the Sermon on the Mount.

I claim to be a man of faith and prayer, and even if I were to be cut to pieces, I trust God would give me the strength not to deny Him, but to assert that He is. The Mussalman says, "He is, and there is no one else." The Christian says the same thing, and so does the Hindu. If I may venture to say so, the Buddhist also says the same

APPENDIX

thing, only in different words. It is true that we may each of us be putting our own interpretation on the word "God." We must of necessity do so; for God embraces, not only this tiny globe of ours, but millions and billions of such globes and worlds beyond worlds. How can we, little crawling creatures, possibly measure His greatness, His boundless love, His infinite compassion? So great is His infinite love and pity that He allows man insolently to deny Him, to wrangle about Him, and even to cut the throat of his fellow-man!

Thus, though we may utter the same words about God, they may not bear the same meaning for us all. But what does that matter? We do not need to proselytize either by our speech or by our writing. We can only do so really with our lives. Let our lives be open books for all to study.

Would that I could persuade all my missionary friends to take this view of their mission! Then there would be no distrust, or suspicion, or jealousy, or dissension amongst us in these religious matters, but only harmony and peace.

Because of its Western, external appearance we in India have come to distrust the Christian missionary endeavour that has reached us from the West.

The one deduction I would like you students to draw from all this is that you yourselves should not be torn from your moorings; and those from the West should not consciously or unconsciously lay violent hands upon the manners and customs of this country, in so far as they are not repugnant to fundamental morality. Do not confuse Jesus's teaching with what passes as modern civilization. I ask you who are missionaries, pray do not do unconscious violence to the people among whom you cast your lot. It is no part of your call, I assure you, to tear up the lives of the people of the East by their roots. Tolerate whatever is good in them. As Christ said to us all: "Judge not, that ye be not judged. Forgive, and it shall be forgiven you."

APPENDIX

For with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again."

In spite of your belief in the greatness of Western civilization, and in spite of your pride in all your achievements, I plead with you to exercise humility. I ask you to leave some little room for honest doubt. Let us simply each one live our life; and if ours is the right life, where is the cause for hurry? It will react of itself.

By all means drink deep of the fountains that are given to you in the Sermon on the Mount; but then you will have to take up sackcloth and ashes also with regard to failure to perform that which is taught in Christ's Sermon. For the teaching of the Sermon was meant for each and every one of us. You cannot serve both God and Mammon. God the Compassionate and the Merciful, who is Tolerance incarnate, allows Mammon to have his nine days' wonder. But I say to you, students and youths, fly from that self-destroying but destructive show of Mammon which I see around me to-day. For you cannot serve Mammon and God together.

(From an address to members of a college at Colombo. See C. F. Andrews, *Mahatma Gandhi's Ideas*, pp. 92-7.)

III

AMONG EVANGELICAL CHRISTIANS

Mr. Baker was getting anxious about my future. He took me to the Wellington Convention. The Protestant Christians organize such gatherings every few years for religious enlightenment, or in other words, self-purification. One may call this religious revival. The Wellington

APPENDIX

Convention was of this type. The chairman was the famous divine, the Reverend Andrew Murray. Mr. Baker had hoped that the atmosphere of religious exaltation at the Convention and the enthusiasm and earnestness of the people attending it would inevitably lead me to embrace Christianity.

But his final hope was the efficacy of prayer. He had an abiding faith in prayer. It was his firm conviction that God could not but listen to prayer fervently offered. He would cite the instances of men like George Muller of Bristol, who depended entirely on prayer even for his temporal needs. I listened to his discourse on the efficacy of prayer with unbiassed attention, and assured him that nothing could prevent me from embracing Christianity, should I feel the call. I had no hesitation in giving him this assurance, as I had long since taught myself to follow the inner voice. Therefore I delighted in submitting myself to it. To act against it would be difficult and painful to me.

So we went to Wellington. Mr. Baker was hard put to it in having "a coloured man" like me for his companion. He had to suffer inconveniences on many occasions entirely on account of me. We had to break the journey on the way, as one of the days happened to be a Sunday, and Mr. Baker and his party would not travel on the sabbath. Though the manager of the station hotel agreed to take me in after much altercation, he absolutely refused to admit me to the dining-room. Mr. Baker was not the man to give way easily. He stood by the rights of the guests of a hotel. But I could see his difficulty. At Wellington also I stayed with Mr. Baker. In spite of his best efforts to conceal the little inconveniences he was put to, I could see them all.

This Convention was an assemblage of devout Christians. I was delighted at their faith. Here I met personally the Reverend Andrew Murray and saw that many were praying

APPENDIX

for me. Some of their hymns I like; they were very sweet.

The Convention lasted for three days. I could understand and appreciate the devoutness of those who attended it. But I saw no reason for changing my belief. It was impossible for me to believe that I could go to heaven or attain salvation only by becoming a Christian. When I frankly said so to some of the good Christian friends, they were shocked. But there was no help for it. My difficulties lay deeper. It was more than I could believe, that Jesus was the only incarnate son of God, and that only he who believed in him would have everlasting life. If God could have sons, all of us were his sons. If Jesus was like God, or God Himself, then all men were like God and could be God Himself. My reason was not ready to believe literally that Jesus by his death and by his blood redeemed the sins of the world. Metaphorically, there might be some truth in it. Again, according to Christianity only human beings had souls, and not other living beings, for whom death meant complete extinction; while I held a contrary belief. I could accept Jesus as a martyr, an embodiment of sacrifice, and a divine teacher, but not as the most perfect man ever born. His death on the cross was a great example to the world, but that there was anything like a mysterious or miraculous virtue in it my heart could not accept. The pious lives of Christians did not give me anything that the lives of men of other faiths had failed to give. I had seen in other lives just the same reformation that I heard of amongst Christians. Philosophically there was nothing extraordinary in Christian principles. From the point of view of sacrifice, it seemed to me that the Hindus greatly surpassed the Christians. It was impossible for me to regard Christianity as a perfect religion or the greatest of all religions.

(In South Africa about 1893. See C. F. Andrews, *Mahatma Gandhi—His Own Story*, pp. 139-41.)

APPENDIX

IV

CHRISTIANITY AND HINDUISM

Not many of you know that my association with Christians—not Christians so-called but *real* Christians—dates from 1889, when as a lad I found myself in London; and that association has grown riper as years have rolled on. In South Africa, where I found myself in the midst of inhospitable surroundings, I was able to make hundreds of Christian friends. I came in touch with the late Mr. Spencer Walton, Director of the South Africa General Mission, and later with the great divine, the Rev. Andrew Murray, and several others.

There was even a time in my life when a very sincere and intimate friend of mine, a great and good Quaker, had designs on me. He thought that I was too good not to become a Christian, I was sorry to have to disappoint him. One missionary friend of mine in South Africa still writes to me and asks me, "How is it with you?" I have always told him that so far as I know it is all well with me. If it was prayer that these friends expected me to make, I was able to tell them that every day the heartfelt prayer within the closed door of my closet went to the Almighty to show me light and give me wisdom and courage to follow that light.

In answer to promises made to one of these Christian friends of mine, I thought it my duty to see one of the biggest of Indian Christians, the late Kali Charan Banerjee. I went to him with an absolutely open mind and in a receptive mood, and I met him also under circumstances which were most affecting. I found that there was much in common between Mr. Banerjee and myself. His simplicity, his humility, his courage, his truthfulness—all these things I have all along admired. He met me when

APPENDIX

his wife was on her death-bed. You cannot imagine a more impressive scene, a more ennobling circumstance. I told Mr. Banerjee: "I have come to you as a seeker"—this was in 1901—"I have come to you in fulfilment of a sacred promise I have made to some of my dearest Christian friends that I will leave no stone unturned to find out the true light." I told him that I had given my friends the assurance that no worldly gain would keep me away from the light if I could^b but see it. Well, I am not going to engage you in giving a description of the little discussion that we had between us. It was very good, very noble. I came away, not sorry, not dejected, not disappointed, but I felt sad that even Mr. Banerjee could not convince me. This was my final, deliberate striving to realize Christianity as it was presented to me.

To-day my position is that, though I admire much in Christianity, I am unable to identify myself with orthodox Christianity. I must tell you in all humility that Hinduism, as I know it, entirely satisfies my soul, fills my whole being, and I find a solace in the Bhagavad Gitā and Upani-shads that I miss even in the Sermon on the Mount. Not that I do not prize the ideal presented therein; not that some of the precious teachings in the Sermon on the Mount have not left a deep impression upon me; but I must confess to you that when doubt haunts me, when disappointments stare me in the face, and when I see not one ray of light on the horizon, I turn to the Bhagavad Gitā, and find a verse to comfort me; and I immediately begin to smile in the a midst of overwhelming sorrow. My life has been full of external tragedies, and if they have not left any visible and indelible effect on me, I owe it to the teachings of the Bhagavad Gitā.

I have told you all these things in order to make absolutely clear to you where I stand, so that I may have, if you will, closer touch with you. I must add that I did not

APPENDIX

stop studying the Bible and the commentaries and other books on Christianity that my friends placed in my hands; but I said to myself that if I was to find my satisfaction through reasoning, I must study the scriptures of other religions also and make my choice. And I turned to the Quran. I tried to understand what I could of Judaism as distinguished from Christianity. I studied Zoroastrianism. And I came to the conclusion that all religions were right, and every one of them imperfect, because they were interpreted with our poor intellects, sometimes with our poor hearts, and more often misinterpreted. In all religions I found to my grief that there were various and even contradictory interpretations of some texts, and I said to myself, "Not these things for me. If I want the satisfaction of my soul I must feel my way. I must wait silently upon God and ask Him to guide me." There is a beautiful verse in Sanskrit which says, "God helps only when man feels utterly helpless and utterly humble." When I was studying Tamil I found in one of the books of Dr. Pope a Tamil proverb which means, "God helps the helpless." I have given you this life-story of my own experience for you to ponder over.

You, the missionaries, come to India thinking that you come to a land of heathen, of idolaters, of men who do not know God. One of the greatest Christian divines, Bishop Heber, wrote two lines which have always left a sting with me: "Where every prospect pleases and only Man is vile." I wish he had not written them. My own experience in my travels throughout India has been to the contrary. I have gone from one end of the country to the other, without any prejudice, in a relentless search after Truth, and I am not able to say that here in this fair land, watered by the great Ganges, the Brahmaputra, and the Jumna, man is vile. He is not vile. He is as much a seeker after truth as you and I are, possibly more so.

APPENDIX

This reminds me of a French book translated for me by a French friend. It is an account of an imaginary expedition in search of Knowledge. One party landed in India and found Truth and God personified in a little pariah's hut. I tell you there are many such huts belonging to the "untouchables" where you will certainly find God. They do not reason, but they persist in their belief that God is. They depend upon God for His assistance and find it, too. There are many stories told throughout the length and breadth of India about these noble "untouchables." Vile outwardly as some of them may be, there are noblest specimens of humanity in their midst.

But does my experience exhaust itself merely with the "untouchables"? No, I am here to tell you that there are non-Brahmins, there are Brahmins, who are as fine specimens of humanity as you will find in any place on the earth. There are Brahmins to-day in India who are embodiments of self-sacrifice, godliness, and humility. There are Brahmins who are devoting themselves body and soul to the service of "untouchables," but with execration from orthodoxy. They do not mind it, because in serving pariahs they are serving God.

I can quote chapter and verse from my experience. I place these facts before you in all humility for the simple reason that you may know this land better, the land which you have come to serve. You are here to find out the distress of the people of India and remove it. But I hope you are here also in receptive mood, and, if there is anything that India has to give you, you will not stop your ears, you will not close your eyes and steel your hearts, to receive all that may be good in this land. I give you my assurance that there is a great deal of good in India.

Do not flatter yourselves with the belief that a mere recital of that celebrated verse in St. John makes a man a Christian. If I have read the Bible correctly, I know many

APPENDIX

men who have never known the name of Jesus Christ, men who have even rejected the official interpretation of Christianity, but would nevertheless, if Jesus came in our midst to-day in the flesh, be probably owned by him more than many of us. I therefore ask you to approach the problem before you with open-heartedness and humility.

It has often occurred to me that a seeker after truth has to be silent. I know the wonderful efficacy of silence. I visited a Trappist monastery in South Africa. A beautiful place it was. Most of the inmates of that place were under a vow of silence. I inquired of the Father the motive of it, and he said that the motive is apparent. We are frail human beings. We do not know very often what we say. If we want to listen to the still small voice that is always speaking within us, it will not be heard if we continually speak. I understand that precious lesson. I know the secret of silence.

I have told my missionary friends, "Noble as you are, you have isolated yourselves from the people whom you want to serve." I cannot help recalling to you the conversation I related in Darjeeling at the Missionary Language School. Lord Salisbury was waited upon by a deputation of missionaries in connection with China, and this deputation wanted protection. I cannot recall the exact words, but give you the purport of the answer Lord Salisbury gave. He said: "Gentlemen, if you want to go to China to preach the message of Christianity, then do not ask for assistance of the temporal power. Go with your lives in your hands, and if the people of China want to kill you, imagine that you have been killed in service of God!" Lord Salisbury was right. Christian missionaries come to India under the shadow, or, if you like, under the protection of a temporal power, and it creates an impassable bar.

If you give me statistics that so many orphans have been reclaimed and brought to the Christian faith, I would

APPENDIX

suffered the tortures because he knew that some day or other in his very lifetime he would be able to demonstrate the infallibility of the Law of Truth. That fact was there; but if he had died in the midst of tortures he would still have adhered to Truth. That is the Truth which I would like to follow. In our Ashram we make it a rule that we must say "No" when we mean No, regardless of consequences.

Then we come to the

DOCTRINE OF AHIMSA

Literally speaking, Ahimsā means "non-killing." But to me it has a world of meaning, and takes me into realms much higher, infinitely higher. It really means that you may not offend anybody; you may not harbour an uncharitable thought, even in connection with one who may consider himself to be your enemy. To one who follows this doctrine there is no room for an enemy. But there may be people who consider themselves to be his enemies. So it is held that we may not harbour an evil thought even in connection with such persons. If we return blow for blow we depart from the doctrine of Ahimsā. But I go farther. If we resent a friend's action, or the so-called enemy's action, we still fall short of this doctrine. But when I say we should not resent, I do not say that we should acquiesce; by the word "resenting" I mean wishing that some harm should be done to the enemy; or that he should be put out of the way, not even by any action of ours, but by the action of somebody else, or, say, by divine agency. If we harbour even this thought we depart from this doctrine of Non-Violence. Those who join the Ashram have literally to accept that meaning.

This does not mean that we practise that doctrine in its entirety. Far from it. It is an ideal which we have to

APPENDIX

reach, and it is an ideal to be reached even at this very moment, if we are capable of doing so. But it is not a proposition in geometry; it is not even like solving difficult problems in higher mathematics—it is infinitely more difficult. Many of us have burnt the midnight oil in solving those problems. But if you want to follow out this doctrine you will have to do much more than burn the midnight oil. You will have to pass many a sleepless night, and go through many a mental torture, before you can even be within measurable distance of this goal. It is the goal, and nothing less than that, which you and I have to reach, if we want to understand what a religious life means.

A man who believes in the efficacy of this doctrine finds in the ultimate stage, when he is about to reach the goal, the whole world at his feet. If you express your love—Ahimsā—in such a manner that it impresses itself indelibly upon your so-called enemy, he must return that love. Under this rule there is no room for organized assassinations, or for murders openly committed, or for any violence for the sake of your country or even for guarding the honour of precious ones that may be under your charge. After all, that would be a poor defence of their honour. This doctrine tells us that we may guard the honour of those under our charge by delivering our own lives into the hands of the man who would commit the sacrilege. And that requires far greater courage than delivering of blows. If you do not retaliate, but stand your ground between your charge and the opponent, simply receiving the blows without retaliating, what happens? I give you my promise that the whole of his violence will be expended on you, and your friend will be left unscathed. Under this plan of life there is no conception of patriotism which justifies such wars as you witness to-day in Europe.

Then again there is

APPENDIX

THE VOW OF CELIBACY

Those who want to perform national service, or to have a gleam of the real religious life, must lead a celibate life, whether married or unmarried. Marriage only brings a woman closer to man, and they become friends in a special sense, never to be parted either in this life or in the lives to come. But I do not think that, in our conception of marriage, our lusts should enter. Be that as it may, this is what is placed before those who come to the Ashram. I do not deal with it at any length.

Then we have, further,

THE VOW OF THE CONTROL OF THE PALATE

A man who wants to control his animal passions easily does so if he controls his palate. I fear this is one of the most difficult vows to follow. Unless we are prepared to rid ourselves of stimulating, heating, and exciting condiments, we shall certainly not be able to control the over-abundant, unnecessary, and exciting stimulation of the animal passions. If we do not do that, we are likely to abuse the sacred trust of our bodies that has been given us, and to become less than animals and brutes, eating, drinking, and indulging in passions which we share with animals. But have you ever seen a horse or cow indulging in the abuse of the palate as we do? Do you suppose that it is a sign of civilization, a sign of real life, that we should multiply our eatables so far that we do not even know where we are; and seek dishes until at last we have become absolutely mad and run after the newspaper sheets which give us advertisements about these dishes?

Then we have once more

THE VOW OF NON-THIEVING

I suggest that we are thieves in a way. If I take anything that I do not need for my own immediate use and keep

APPENDIX

it, I thieve it from somebody else. It is the fundamental law of Nature, without exception, that Nature produces enough for our wants from day to day ; and if only everybody took enough for himself and nothing more, there would be no pauperism in this world, there would be no man dying of starvation. I am no Socialist, and I do not want to dispossess those who have got possessions; but I do say that personally those of us who want to see light out of darkness have to follow this rule. I do not want to dispossess anybody; I should then be departing from the rule of Non-Violence. If somebody else possesses more than I do, let him. But so far as my own life has to be regulated I dare not possess anything which I do not want. In India we have got many millions of people who have to be satisfied with one meal a day, and that meal consisting of a *chapatti*¹ containing no fat in it and a pinch of salt. You and I have no right to anything that we really have until these many millions are clothed and fed. You and I, who ought to know better, must adjust our wants, and even undergo voluntary privation in order that they may be nursed, fed, and clothed.

Then there is the "Vow of Non-Possession," which follows as a matter of course, and needs no further explanation at this point, where only a brief summary of various difficulties and their answer is being given.

Then I go to

THE VOW OF SWADESHI

The vow of Swadeshi is a necessary vow. We are departing from one of the sacred laws of our being when we leave our neighbourhood and go out somewhere else in order to satisfy our wants. If a man comes from Bombay and offers you wares, you are not justified in supporting

¹ Bread made without yeast—somewhat like a pancake.

APPENDIX

the Bombay merchant so long as you have got a merchant at your very door, born and bred in Madras.

That is my view of Swadeshi. In your village you are bound to support your village barber to the exclusion of the finished barber who may come to you from Madras. If you find it necessary that your village barber should reach the attainments of the barber from Madras you may train him to that. Send him to Madras by all means, if you wish, in order that he may learn his calling. Until you do that you are not justified in going to another barber. That is Swadeshi. So when we find that there are many things that we cannot get in India we must try to do without them. We may have to do without many things; but, believe me, when you have that frame of mind you will find a great burden taken off your shoulders, even as the Pilgrim did in that inimitable book *Pilgrim's Progress*. There came a time when the mighty burden that the Pilgrim was carrying unconsciously dropped from him, and he felt a freer man than he was when he started on the journey. So will you feel freer men than you are now, if immediately you adopt this Swadeshi life. We have also

THE VOW OF FEARLESSNESS

I found, through my wanderings in India, that my country is seized with a paralysing fear. We may not open our lips in public: we may only talk about our opinions secretly. We may do anything we like within the four walls of our house; but those things are not for public consumption.

If we had taken a vow of silence I would have nothing to say. I suggest to you that there is only One whom we have to fear, that is God. When we fear God, then we shall fear no man, however high-placed he may be; and if you want to follow the vow of Truth, then fearlessness

APPENDIX

is absolutely necessary. Before we can aspire to guide the destinies of India we shall have to adopt this habit of fearlessness.

And then we have also

THE VOW REGARDING THE "UNTOUCHABLES"

There is an ineffaceable blot that Hinduism to-day carries with it. I have declined to believe that it has been handed down to us from immemorial times. I think that this miserable, wretched, enslaving spirit of "untouchableness" must have come to us when we were at our lowest ebb. This evil has stuck to us and still remains with us. It is, to my mind, a curse that has come to us; and as long as that curse remains with us, so long I think we are bound to consider that every affliction in this sacred land is a proper punishment for the indelible crime that we are committing. That any person should be considered untouchable because of his calling passes my comprehension; and you, the student world, who receive all this modern education, if you become a party to this crime, it were better that you received no education whatsoever.

EDUCATION THROUGH THE VERNACULARS

In Europe every cultured man learns, not only his own language, but also other languages.

In order to solve the problem of language in India we in this Ashram must make it a point to learn as many Indian vernaculars as possible. The trouble of learning these languages is nothing compared to that of mastering English. How dare we rub off from our memory all the years of our infancy? But that is precisely what we do when we commence our higher life through the medium of a foreign tongue. This creates a breach for which we shall have to pay dearly. And you will see now the con-

APPENDIX

nection between this education and untouchability—this persistence of the latter in spite of the spread of knowledge and education. Education has enabled us to see the horrible crime, but we are seized with fear, and therefore we cannot take this doctrine to our homes.

THE VOW OF KHADDAR¹

You may ask, "Why should we use our hands?" You may say, "Manual work has got to be done by those who are illiterate. I can only occupy myself with reading literature and political essays." We have to realize the dignity of labour. If a barber or shoemaker attends a college he ought not to abandon his profession. I consider that such professions are just as good as the profession of medicine.

Last of all, when you have conformed to these rules you may come to

THE RELIGIOUS USE OF POLITICS

Politics, divorced from religion, has absolutely no meaning. If the student world crowd the political platforms of this country, that is not necessarily a healthy sign of national growth; but this does not mean that you, in your student life, ought not to study politics. Politics are a part of our being; we ought to understand our national institutions. We may do this from our infancy. So in our Ashram every child is taught to understand the political institutions of our country and to know how the country is vibrating with new emotions, with new aspirations, with new life. But we want also the steady light, the infallible light of religious faith; not a faith which merely appeals to the intelligence, but a faith which is

¹ Khaddar is home-spun and home-woven cloth. The vow of Khaddar would be to spin with one's own hands and to wear nothing but home-spun garments.

APPENDIX

indelibly inscribed on the heart. First we want to realize our religious consciousness, and immediately we have done that, the whole department of life is open to us; and it should then be a sacred privilege of all, so that when young men grow to manhood they may do so properly equipped to battle with life. To-day what happens is this: much of the political life is confined to the students, but immediately they cease to be students, they sink into oblivion, seeking miserable employments, knowing nothing about God, nothing of fresh air or bright light, or of real vigorous independence, such as comes out of obedience to those laws that I have placed before you on this occasion.

(See C. F. Andrews, *op. cit.*, pp. 101-11.)

VI

"TO EVERY ENGLISHMAN" (1920)

DEAR FRIEND,

I wish that every Englishman may see this appeal, and give thoughtful attention to it.

Let me introduce myself to you. In my humble opinion no Indian has co-operated with the British Government more than I have for an unbroken period of twenty-nine years of public life in the face of circumstances that might well have turned any other man into a rebel. I ask you to believe me when I tell you that my co-operation was not based upon the fear of the punishments provided by your laws or any other selfish motives. It was free and voluntary co-operation, based on the belief that the sum-total of the British Government was for the benefit of India. I put my life in peril four times for the sake of the Empire: at

APPENDIX

the time of the Boer War, when I was in charge of the Ambulance Corps whose work was mentioned in General Buller's dispatches; at the time of the Zulu Revolt in Natal, when I was in charge of a similar corps; at the time of the commencement of the late War, when I raised an ambulance corps, and as a result of the strenuous training had a severe attack of pleurisy; and, lastly, in fulfilment of my promise to Lord Chelmsford at the War Conference in Delhi, I threw myself in such an active recruiting campaign in Khaira District, involving long and trying marches, that I had an attack of dysentery which proved almost fatal. I did all this in the full belief that acts such as mine must gain for my country an equal status in the Empire. So last December I pleaded hard for a trustful co-operation. I fully believed that Mr. Lloyd George would redeem his promise to the Mussalmans, and that the revelations of the official atrocities in the Punjab would secure full reparation for the Punjabis. But the treachery of Mr. Lloyd George and its appreciation by you, and the condonation of the Punjab atrocities, have completely shattered my faith in the good intentions of the Government and the nation which is supporting it.

But, though my faith in your good intentions is gone, I recognize your bravery; and I know that what you will not yield to justice and reason you will gladly yield to bravery.

See what the British Empire means to India:—

- (1) Exploitation of India's resources for the benefit of Great Britain.
- (2) An ever-increasing military expenditure and a Civil Service the most expensive in the world.
- (3) Extravagant working of every Department in utter disregard of India's poverty.
- (4) Disarmament and therefore emasculation of a whole

APPENDIX

nation lest an armed nation might imperil the lives of a handful of you in our midst.

- (5) Traffic in intoxicating drugs and liquors for the purpose of maintaining a top-heavy administration.
- (6) Progressively repressive legislation in order to suppress an ever-growing agitation seeking to express a nation's agony.
- (7) Degrading treatment of Indians residing in British Dominions.
- (8) Total disregard of our feelings by glorifying the Punjab Administration and flouting the Muhammadan sentiment.

I know you would not mind if we could fight and wrest the sceptre from your hands. You know we are powerless to do that; for you have ensured our incapacity to fight in open and honourable battle. Bravery on the battlefield is thus impossible for us. Bravery of the soul still remains open to us.

(See C. F. Andrews, *op. cit.* pp. 239-41. A report of the Trial Speech below will be found in the same book.)

VII

THE TRIAL SPEECH (1922)

Before I read this statement, I would like to state that I entirely endorse the learned Advocate-General's remarks in connection with my humble self. It is the most painful duty with me, but I have to discharge that duty knowing the responsibility that rests upon my shoulders, and I wish to endorse all the blame that the learned Advocate-General has thrown on my shoulders in connection with the Bom-

APPENDIX

bay, Madras, and Chauri Chaura occurrences. Thinking over these deeply and sleeping over them, night after night, it is impossible for me to dissociate myself from the diabolical crimes of Chauri Chaura, or the mad outrages of Bombay. He is quite right when he says that, as a man of responsibility, a man having received a fair share of education, having had a fair share of experience of this world, I should have known the consequences of every one of my acts. I know that I was playing with fire. I ran the risk, and if I was set free, I would still do the same. I have felt it this morning that I would have failed in my duty, if I did not say what I said here just now.

I wanted to avoid violence; I want to avoid violence. Non-Violence is the first article of my faith. It is also the last article of my creed. But I had to make my choice. I had either to submit to a system which I considered had done an irreparable harm to my country, or incur the risk of the mad fury of my people bursting forth, when they understood the truth from my lips. I know that my people have sometimes gone mad. I am deeply sorry for it, and I am therefore here to submit, not to a light penalty, but to the highest penalty. I do not ask for mercy. I do not plead any extenuating act. I am here, therefore, to invite and cheerfully submit to the highest penalty that can be inflicted upon me for what in law is a deliberate crime, and what appears to me to be the highest duty of a citizen. The only course open to you, the Judge, is, as I am just going to say in my statement, either to resign your post or inflict on me the severest penalty, if you believe that the system and law you are assisting to administer are good for the people. I do not expect that kind of conversion but by the time I have finished with my statement, you will perhaps have a glimpse of what is raging within my breast to run this maddest risk which a sane man can run.

APPENDIX

I owe it, perhaps, to the Indian public and to the public in England that I should explain why from a stanch Loyalist and Co-operator I have become an uncompromising disaffectionist and Non-Co-operator. To the Court, too, I should say why I plead guilty to the charge of promoting disaffection towards the Government established by law in India.

My public life began in 1893, in South Africa, in troubled weather. My first contact with British authority in that country was not of a happy character. I discovered that as a man and an Indian I had no rights. More correctly, I discovered that I had no rights as a man, because I was an Indian.

But I was not baffled. I thought that this treatment of Indians was an excrescence upon a system that was intrinsically and mainly good. I gave the Government my voluntary and hearty co-operation, criticizing it freely where I felt it was faulty, but never wishing its destruction.

Consequently, when the existence of the Empire was threatened in 1899 by the Boer challenge, I offered my services to it, raised a volunteer ambulance corps, and served at several actions that took place for the relief of Ladysmith. Similarly in 1906, at the time of the Zulu revolt, I raised a stretcher-bearing party and served till the end of the "rebellion." On both these occasions I received medals, and was even mentioned in dispatches. For my work in South Africa I was given by Lord Hardinge a Kaiser-i-Hind Gold Medal. When the War broke out in 1914 between England and Germany, I raised a volunteer ambulance corps in London, consisting of the then resident Indians in London, chiefly students. Its work was acknowledged by the authorities to be valuable. Lastly, in India, when a special appeal was made at the War Conference in Delhi in 1918 by Lord Chelmsford for

APPENDIX

recruits, I struggled at the cost of my health to raise a corps in Khaira, and the response was being made when the hostilities ceased and orders were received that no more recruits were wanted. In all these efforts at service I was actuated by the belief that it was possible by such service to gain a status of full equality in the Empire for my countrymen.

The first shock came in the shape of the Rowlatt Act, a law designed to rob the people of all real freedom. I felt called upon to lead an intensive agitation against it. Then followed the Punjab horrors, beginning with the massacre at Jallianwala Bagh and culminating in crawling orders, public floggings, and other indescribable humiliations. I discovered, too, that the plighted word of the Prime Minister to the Mussalmans of India, regarding the integrity of Turkey and the holy places of Islam, was not likely to be fulfilled. But in spite of forebodings and the grave warnings of friends, at the Amritsar Congress in 1919 I fought for Co-operation and for working the Montagu-Chelmsford reforms, hoping that the Prime Minister would redeem his promise to the Indian Mussalmans, that the Punjab wound would be healed, and that the reforms, inadequate and unsatisfactory though they were, marked a new era of hope in the life of India.

But all that hope was shattered. The Khilafat promise was not to be redeemed. The Punjab crime was whitewashed; and most of the culprits not only went unpunished, but remained in service, continued to draw pensions from the Indian revenues, and in some cases were even rewarded; I saw, too, that not only did the reforms not mark a change of heart, but they were only a method of further draining India of her wealth and of prolonging her servitude.

I came reluctantly to the conclusion that the British connection had made India more helpless than she ever

APPENDIX

was before, politically and economically. A disarmed India has no power of resistance against any aggressor if she wanted to engage in an armed conflict with him. So much is this the case that some of our best men consider that India must take generations before she can achieve the Dominion status. She has become so poor that she has little power of resisting famines.

Before the British advent, India spun and wove, in her millions of cottages, just the supplement she needed for adding to her meagre agricultural resources. This cottage industry, so vital for India's existence, has been ruined by incredibly heartless and inhuman processes, as described by English witnesses.

Little do town-dwellers know how the semi-starved masses of India are slowly sinking to lifelessness. Little do they know that their miserable comfort represents the brokerage they get for the work they do for the foreign exploiter, that the profits and the brokerage are sucked from the masses. Little do they realize that the Government established by law in British India is carried on for this exploitation of the masses. No sophistry, no jugglery in figures, can explain away the evidence that the skeletons in many villages present to the naked eye. I have no doubt whatsoever that both England and the town-dwellers of India will have to answer, if there is a God above, for this crime against humanity, which is perhaps unequalled in history.

The law itself in this country has been used to serve the foreign exploiter. My unbiased examination of the Punjab Martial Law cases has led me to believe that at least ninety-five per cent of convictions were wholly bad. My experience of political cases in India leads me to the conclusion that in nine out of every ten the condemned men were totally innocent. Their crime consisted in their love of their country. In ninety-nine cases out of a hundred,

APPENDIX

justice has been denied to Indians as against Europeans in the Courts of India.

This is not an exaggerated picture. It is the experience of almost every Indian who has had anything to do with such cases. In my opinion, the administration of the law is thus prostituted, consciously or unconsciously, for the benefit of the exploiter.

The greater misfortune is that the Englishmen and their Indian associates in the administration of the country do not know that they are engaged in the crime I have attempted to describe. I am satisfied that many Englishmen and Indian officials honestly believe that they are administering one of the best systems devised in the world, and that India is making steady, though slow, progress. They do not know that a subtle but effective system of terrorism, together with an organized display of force on the one hand, and the deprivation of all powers of retaliation or self-defence on the other, have emasculated the people and induced in them the habit of simulation. This awful habit has added to the ignorance and the self-deception of the administrators.

Section 124, A, under which I am happily charged, is perhaps the prince among the political sections of the Indian Penal Code designed to suppress the liberty of the citizen. Affection cannot be manufactured or regulated by law. If one has no affection for a person or system, one should be free to give the fullest expression to his disaffection, so long as he does not contemplate, promote, or incite to violence. But the section under which Mr. Banker and I are charged is one under which mere promotion of disaffection is a crime. I have studied some of the cases tried under it, and I know that some of the most loved of India's patriots have been convicted under it. I consider it a privilege, therefore, to be charged under that section.

APPENDIX

I have endeavoured to give in their briefest outline the reasons for my disaffection. I have no personal ill-will against any single administrator, much less can I have any disaffection towards the King's person. But I hold it to be a virtue to be disaffected towards a Government which in its totality has done more harm to India than any previous system. India is less manly under the British rule than she ever was before. Holding such a belief, I consider it to be a sin to have affection for the system. And it has been a precious privilege for me to be able to write what I have in various articles tendered in evidence against me.

In fact, I believe that I have rendered a service to India and England by showing in Non-Co-operation the way out of the unnatural state in which both are living. In my humble opinion, Non-Co-operation with evil is as much a duty as is Co-operation with good. But in the past, Non-Co-operation has been deliberately expressed in violence to the evildoer. I am endeavouring to show to my countrymen that violent Non-Co-operation only multiplies evil, and that, as evil can only be sustained by violence, withdrawal of support of evil requires complete abstention from violence.

Non-Violence implies voluntary submission to the penalty for Non-Co-operation with evil. I am here, therefore, to invite and submit cheerfully to the highest penalty that can be inflicted upon me for what in law is a deliberate crime, and what appears to me to be the highest duty of a citizen. The only course open to you, the Judge, is either to resign your post and thus dissociate yourself from evil, if you feel that the law you are called upon to administer is an evil and that in reality I am innocent; or to inflict on me the severest penalty, if you believe that the system and law you are assisting to administer are good for the people of this country, and that my activity is therefore injurious to the common weal.

APPENDIX

VIII

SPEECH AT THE LONDON ROUND TABLE CONFERENCE (1931)

Prime Minister and Friends, I wish that I could have done without having to speak to you, but I felt that I would not have been just to you or just to my principles if I did not put in what may be the last word on behalf of the Congress. I live under no illusion. I do not think that anything that I can say this evening can possibly influence the decision of the Cabinet. Probably the decision has been already taken. Matters of the liberty of practically a whole Continent can hardly be decided by mere argumentation, even negotiation. Negotiation has its purpose and has its play, but only under certain conditions. Without those conditions negotiations are a fruitless task.

The Congress represents the spirit of rebellion. I know that the word "rebellion" must not be whispered at a Conference which has been summoned in order to arrive at an agreed solution of India's troubles through negotiation. Speaker after speaker has got up and said that India should achieve her liberty through negotiation, by argument, and that it will be the greatest glory of Great Britain if Great Britain yields to India's demands by argument. But the Congress does not hold that view—quite. The Congress has an alternative which is unpleasant to you.

I heard several speakers—and let me say I have endeavoured not to miss a single sitting; I have tried to follow every speaker with the utmost attention and with all the respect that I could possibly give to these speakers—saying what a dire calamity it would be if India was fired with the spirit of lawlessness, rebellion, terrorism and so on. I do not pretend to have read history, but as

APPENDIX

a school-boy I had to pass a paper in history also, and I read that the page of history is soiled red with the blood of those who have fought for freedom. I do not know an instance in which nations have attained their own without having to go through an incredible measure of travail. The dagger of the assassin, the poison bowl, the bullet of the rifleman, the spear and all these weapons and methods of destruction have been up to now used by what I consider blind lovers of liberty and freedom, and the historian has not condemned him. I hold no brief for the terrorists.

I have mentioned these things to show that for the sake of liberty people have fought, people have lost their lives, people have killed and have sought death at the hands of those whom they have sought to oust. The Congress devises a new method not known to history, namely, that of civil disobedience, and the Congress has been following that method up. But again I am up against a stone wall and I am told that that is a method that no government in the world will tolerate. Well, of course, the governments may not tolerate, no government has tolerated open rebellion. No government may tolerate civil disobedience, but governments have to succumb even to these forces, as the great Dutch Government after eight years of trial had to yield to the logic of facts. General Smuts is a brave General, a great statesman and a very hard taskmaster also, but he himself recoiled with horror from even the contemplation of doing to death innocent men and women who were merely fighting for the preservation of their self-respect, and the things which he had vowed he would never yield in the year 1908, reinforced as he was by General Botha, he had to do in the year 1914 after having tried these civil resisters through and through. And in India Lord Chelmsford had to do the same thing; the Governor of Bombay had to do the same thing in Borsad and Bardoli.

APPENDIX

I suggest to you, Prime Minister, it is too late to-day to resist this, and it is this thing which weighs me down, this choice that lies before them, the parting of the ways probably. I shall hope against hope, I shall strain every nerve to achieve an honourable settlement for my country, if I can do so without having to put the millions of my countrymen and countrywomen and even children through this ordeal of fire. It can be a matter of no joy and comfort to me to lead them on again to a fight of that character, but if a further ordeal of fire has to be our lot, I shall approach that with the greatest joy and with the greatest consolation that I was doing what I felt to be right, the country was doing what it felt to be right; and the country will have the additional satisfaction of knowing that it was not at least taking lives, it was giving lives; it was not making the British people directly suffer, it was suffering.

Whilst there is yet a little sand left in the glass, I want you to understand what this Congress stands for. My life is at your disposal. The lives of all the members of the Working Committee, the all-India Congress Committee, are at your disposal. But remember that you have at your disposal the lives of all these dumb millions. I do not want to sacrifice those lives if I can possibly help it. Therefore please remember that I will count no sacrifice too great if by chance I can pull through an honourable settlement. You will find me always having the greatest spirit of compromise, if I can but fire you with the spirit that is working in the Congress, namely, that India must have real liberty. Call it by any name you like: a rose will smell as sweet by any other name, but it must be the rose of liberty that I want and not the artificial product. If your mind and the Congress mind, the mind of this Conference and the mind of the British people, mean the same thing by the same word, then you will find the amplest room for

APPENDIX

compromise, and you will find the Congress itself always in a compromising spirit. But so long as there is not that one mind, that one definition, not one implication for the same word that you and I and we may be using, so long there is no compromise possible. How can there be any compromise so long as we each one of us has a different definition for the same words that we may be using? It is impossible, Prime Minister. I want to suggest to you in all humility that it is utterly impossible then to find a meeting ground, to find a ground where you can apply the spirit of compromise. And I am very grieved to have to say that up to now I have not been able to discover a common definition for the terms that we have been exchanging during all these weary weeks.

I was shown last week the Statute of Westminster by a sceptic, and he said: "Have you seen the definition of 'Dominion'?" I read the definition of "Dominion," and naturally I was not at all perplexed or shocked to see that the word "Dominion" was exhaustively defined, and it had not a general definition but a particular definition. It simply said: the word "Dominion" shall include Australia, South Africa, Canada and so on, ending with the Irish Free State. I do not think I noticed Egypt there. Then he said: "Do you see what your Dominion means?" It did not make any impression upon me. I do not mind what my Dominion means or what complete independence means. In a way I was relieved. I said I am now relieved from having to quarrel about the word "Dominion," because I am out of it. But I want complete independence, and even so, so many Englishmen have said: "Yes, you can have complete independence, but what is the meaning of complete independence?" and again we come to different definitions. Therefore, I say the Congress claim is registered as complete independence.

One of your great statesmen—I do not think I should

APPENDIX

give his name—was debating with me, and he said: "Honestly, I did not know that you meant this by complete independence." He ought to have known, but he did not know, and I shall tell you what he did not know. When I said to him, "I cannot be a partner in an Empire," he said, "Of course, that is logical." I said, "But I want to become that. It is not as if I shall be if I am compelled to, but I want to become a partner with Great Britain. I want to become a partner with the English people; but I want to enjoy precisely the same liberty that your people enjoy, and I want to seek this partnership not merely for the benefit of India, and not merely for mutual benefit; I want to seek this partnership in order that the great weight that is crushing the world to atoms may be lifted from its shoulders."

This took place ten or twelve days ago. Strange as it may appear, I got a note from another Englishman whom also you know and whom also you respect. Among many things, he writes: "I believe profoundly that the peace and happiness of mankind depend on our friendship," and, as if I would not understand that, he says, "your people and mine." I must read to you what he also says, "And of all Indians you are the one that the real Englishman likes and understands."

He does not waste any words on flattery, and I do not think he has intended this last expression to flatter me. It will not flatter me in the slightest degree. There are many things in this note which, if I could share them with you, would perhaps make you understand better the significance of this expression; but let me tell you that when he writes this last sentence he does not mean me personally. I personally signify nothing, and I know I would mean nothing to any single Englishman; but I mean something to some Englishmen because I represent a cause, because I seek to represent a nation, a great organization

APPENDIX

which has made itself felt. That is the reason why he says this.

But then, if I could possibly find that working basis, Prime Minister, there is ample room for compromise. It is friendship I crave. My business is not to throw overboard the slave-holder and tyrant. My philosophy forbids me to do so, and to-day the Congress has accepted that philosophy not as a creed, as it is to me, but as a policy, because the Congress believes that it is the right and best thing for India, a nation of 350 millions, to do. A nation of 350 million people does not need the dagger of the assassin, it does not need the poison bowl, it does not need the sword, the spear or the bullet. It needs simply a will of its own, an ability to say "No," and that nation is to-day learning to say "No."

But what is it that that nation does? Summarily, or at all to dismiss Englishmen? No. Its mission is to-day to convert Englishmen. I do not want to break the bond between England and India, but I do want to transform that bond. I want to transform that slavery into complete freedom for my country. Call it complete independence or whatever you like, I will not quarrel about that word, and even though my countrymen may dispute with me for having taken some other word, I shall be able to bear down that opposition so long as the content of the word that you may suggest to me bears the same meaning. Hence I have times without number to urge upon your attention that the safeguards that have been suggested are completely unsatisfactory. They are not in the interests of India.

Three experts from the Federation of Commerce and Industry have in their own manner, each in his different manner, told you out of their expert experience how utterly impossible it is for any body of responsible Ministers to tackle the problem of administration when eighty

APPENDIX

per cent of India's resources are mortgaged irretrievably. Better than I could have shown to you they have shown, out of the amplitude of their knowledge, what these financial safeguards mean for India. They mean the complete cramping of India. They have discussed at this table financial safeguards, but that includes necessarily the question of Defence and the question of the Army. Yet while I say that the safeguards are unsatisfactory as they have been presented, I have not hesitated to say, and I do not hesitate to repeat, that the Congress is pledged to giving safeguards, endorsing safeguards which may be demonstrated to be in the interests of India.

At one of the sittings of the Federal Structure Committee I had no hesitation in amplifying the admission and saying that these safeguards must be also of benefit to Great Britain. I do not want safeguards which are merely beneficial to India and prejudicial to the real interests of Great Britain. The fancied interests of India will have to be sacrificed. The fancied interests of Great Britain will have to be sacrificed. The illegitimate interests of India will have to be sacrificed. The illegitimate interests of Great Britain will also have to be sacrificed.

I will not be baffled. I shall be here as long as I am required because I do not want to revive civil disobedience. I want to turn the truce that was arrived at, at Delhi, into a permanent settlement. But for heaven's sake give me, a frail man, sixty-two years gone, a little bit of a chance. Find a little corner for him and the organization that he represents. You distrust that organization though you may seemingly trust me. Do not for one moment differentiate me from the organization of which I am but a drop in the ocean. I am no greater than the organization to which I belong. I am infinitely smaller than that organization; and if you find me a place, if you trust me, I invite you to trust the Congress also. Your trust in me otherwise is

APPENDIX

a broken reed. I have no authority save what I derived from the Congress. If you will work the Congress for all it is worth, then you will say good-bye to terrorism; then you will not need terrorism. To-day you have to fight the school of terrorists which is there with your disciplined and organized terrorism, because you will be blind to the facts or the writing on the wall. Will you not see the writing that these terrorists are writing with their blood? Will you not see that we do not want bread made of wheat, but we want bread of liberty; and without that liberty there are thousands to-day who are sworn not to give themselves peace or to give the country peace.

I urge you then to read that writing on the wall. I ask you not to try the patience of a people known to be proverbially patient. We speak of the mild Hindu, and the Mussulman also by contact, good or evil, with the Hindu, has himself become mild. And that mention of the Mussulman brings me to the baffling problem of minorities. Believe me, that problem exists here, and I repeat what I used to say in India—I have not forgotten those words—that without the problem of minorities being solved there is no Swaraj for India, there is no freedom for India. I know that; I realize it; and yet I came here in the hope, perchance, that I might be able to pull through a solution here. But I do not despair of some day or other finding a real and living solution in connection with the minorities problem. I repeat what I have said elsewhere, that so long as the wedge in the shape of foreign rule divides community from community and class from class, there will be no real living solution, there will be no living friendship between these communities. It will be after all and at best a paper solution. But immediately you withdraw that wedge, the domestic ties, the domestic affections, the knowledge of common birth—do you suppose that all these will count for nothing?

APPENDIX

Were Hindus and Mussulmans and Sikhs always at war with one another when there was no British rule, when there was no English face seen there? We have chapter and verse given to us by Hindu historians and by Mussulman historians to say that we were living in comparative peace even then.

This quarrel is not old; this quarrel is coeval with this acute shame. I dare to say it is coeval with the British advent, and immediately this relationship, the unfortunate, artificial, unnatural relationship between Great Britain and India is transformed into a natural relationship, when it becomes, if it does become, a voluntary partnership to be given up, to be dissolved at the will of either party, when it becomes that, you will find that Hindus, Mussulmans, Sikhs, Europeans, Anglo-Indians, Christians, Untouchables, will all live together as one man.

I want to say one word about the Princes, and I shall have done. I have not said much about the Princes, nor do I intend to say much to-night about the Princes, but I should be wronging them, and I should be wronging the Congress if I did not register my claim, not with the Round Table Conference, but with the Princes. It is open to the Princes to give their terms on which they will join the Federation. I have appealed to them to make the path easy for those who inhabit the other part of India, and therefore I can only make these suggestions for their favourable consideration, for their earnest consideration. I think that if they accepted, no matter what they are, but some fundamental rights as the common property of all India, and if they accepted that position and allowed those rights to be tested by the Court, which will again be of their own creation, and if they introduced elements—only elements—of representation on behalf of their subjects, I think that they would have gone a long way to conciliate their subjects. They would have gone a long way to show to the world and to show to the whole of

APPENDIX

India that they are also fired with a democratic spirit, that they do not want to remain undiluted autocrats, but that they want to become constitutional monarchs even as King George of Great Britain is.

Sir, a note has been placed in my hands by my friend, Sir Abdul Qaiyum, and he says, will not I say one word about the Frontier Province? I will, and it is this. Let India get what she is entitled to and what she can really take, but whatever she gets, whenever she gets it, let the Frontier Province get complete autonomy to-day. That Frontier will then be a standing demonstration to the whole of India, and therefore the whole vote of the Congress will be given in favour of the Frontier Province getting Provincial autonomy to-morrow. Prime Minister, if you can possibly get your Cabinet to endorse the proposition that from to-morrow the Frontier Province becomes a full-fledged autonomous Province I shall then have a proper footing amongst the Frontier tribes and convene them to my assistance when those over the border cast an evil eye on India.

Last of all, my last is a pleasant task for me. This is, perhaps, the last time that I shall be sitting with you at negotiations. It is not that I want that. I want to sit at the same table with you in your closets and to negotiate and to plead with you and to go down on bended knee before I take the final leap and final plunge. But whether I have the good fortune to continue to tender my co-operation or not does not depend upon me. It largely depends upon you. But it may not even depend upon you. It depends upon so many circumstances over which neither you nor we may have any control whatsoever. Then let me perform this pleasant task of giving my thanks to all, from Their Majesties down to the poorest men in the East End, where I have taken up my habitation.

In that settlement which represents the poor people of

APPENDIX

the East End of London I have become one of them. They have accepted me as a member, and as a favoured member of their family. It will be one of the richest treasures that I shall carry with me. Here, too, I have found nothing but courtesy and nothing but a genuine affection from all with whom I have come in touch. I have come in touch with so many Englishmen. It has been a priceless privilege to me. They have listened to what must have often appeared to them to be unpleasant, although it was true. Although I have often been obliged to say these things to them they have never shown the slightest impatience or irritation. It is impossible for me to forget these things. No matter what befalls me, no matter what the fortunes may be of this Round Table Conference, one thing I shall certainly carry with me—that is, that from high to low I have found nothing but the utmost courtesy and the utmost affection. I consider it was well worth my paying this visit to England in order to find this human affection. It has enhanced, it has deepened my irrepressible faith in human nature that although Englishmen and English-women have been fed upon the lies that I so often see disfiguring your Press, that although in Lancashire the Lancashire people had perhaps some reason for becoming irritated against me, I found no irritation and no resentment even in the operatives. The operatives, men and women, hugged me. They treated me as one of their own. I shall never forget that.

I am carrying with me thousands upon thousands of English friendships. I do not know them, but I read that affection in their eyes, as early in the morning I walk through your streets. All this hospitality, all this kindness will never be effaced from my memory no matter what befalls my unhappy land. I thank you for your forbearance.

(*Indian Round Table Conference Proceedings, 1932, H.M. Stationery Office, pp. 389-99, abbreviated.*)

THE HINDU IDEA OF TRUTH

by J. H. MUIRHEAD, F.B.A., LL.D.
*Emeritus Professor of Philosophy, University
of Birmingham*

It is a high privilege to have the opportunity of contributing, even though it be only a few lines, to a volume in honour of one who has given lustre to contemporary history in a way that none other has—the man who, in Romain Rolland's words, "has raised up three hundred millions of his fellow men, shaken the British Empire and inaugurated in human politics the most powerful movement that the world has seen for nearly two thousand years." At the time when leaders in other lands were either challenging the existence of any such thing as human justice or of any moral governance of the world, or were seeking to do justice to one class of society by the persecution of another, Gandhi was engaged in a crusade for the deliverance of India from bondage to another nation and of any class in India to other classes, in the name of the unity of mankind and of a kingdom not of this world. Besides all this, and likely to count for even more in centuries to come, not only in India "that timeless land" but throughout the world, he has given living witness to the best that philosophy has had to say upon the Object towards which all religion that is worthy of the name is directed, and upon the echo which its summons to seek perfection finds in the individual soul.

I am not likely in these few lines to say anything that is not better said elsewhere in this volume, but there is one word, central to the teaching of Hinduism in general and to Gandhi's interpretation of it in particular, which, on account of its ambiguity, is apt to form a stumbling block to the ready acceptance of it on the part of those

who are imbued with the scientific and practical spirit of the West, and on which I should like to use this opportunity to make a short comment.

It was suggested to me on the occasion of the first lecture recently given by Sir Sarvepalli Radhakrishnan at a meeting of the British Institute of Philosophy under the Subrahmanya Iyer Foundation, the object of which is to promote the study of "Ultimate Truth." In introducing the lecturer the Chairman drew attention to the difficulty some have in reconciling the founder's idea of truth with the ordinary philosophical one of it as "the agreement of opinion with fact." In contrast to this definition of the word it seemed in the above title to be used in a vague sense, which not only included the totally different idea of moral goodness and social justice, but assumed that it was possible to attain some ultimate, completely satisfactory expression of truth. In reply to this criticism the lecturer had no difficulty in showing that, whatever can be said in favour of the philosophical definition and limitation of the idea of truth, Western literature itself recognizes another wider use of the word, as we have it over and over again in the Prophets and most clearly of all in the great Gospel saying, "Ye shall know the Truth and the Truth shall make you free." While one could see that the audience was deeply moved by the speaker's eloquent exposition of the Hindu doctrine, one could not help thinking that there were some who still felt that something remained to be said about the source of this difference and about the relation which the two meanings bore to each other. "Could it be," I asked myself, "that with all its subtlety Indian thought had failed to make clear the distinction, which we have inherited from the Greeks, between Knowing and Being—reality as it presents itself to our minds, and reality as it is or would be to the divine mind?" I did not believe that so fundamental a distinction

had been missed by the great Indian thinkers, but it might, I thought, be that in more popular statements⁶ (as for instance in Gandhi's "Truth is that which *is*; error that which *is not*," "Hinduism is the religion of truth; Truth is God," "There is no other God than Truth") this difference was ignored. Anyway it seemed worth while to experiment by substituting in all such passages "reality" for "truth" and noting how far this would clarify the situation.

If this were done, it might, in the first place, be possible to define truth in the narrower sense as the reflection or expression of reality in the mirror of the human mind. In religious language truth would then be "the Word of God." ("O God," exclaimed Kepler, "I think Thy thoughts after Thee.") But in the second place it would leave it open to us to find other expressions of reality in other forms of experience besides thinking. Why may not the Real mirror itself in what we do as well as in what we think? in the good will as well as in the true thought? Is there anything that seems to give more of reality to our willed actions than the sense of their being in agreement with what our world, taken in its widest scope, requires of us—once more in religious language, of their being one with the Will of God? Or again, since mere right action is not in itself enough but the doing of it must spring from right feeling, may it not be in love of our fellows that the reality both of ourselves and of them comes home to us most simply and vividly? Widen your idea of fellowship and take in all living things, as Gandhi does ("Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. Yes, but who is my neighbour?")—do this and do you not come nearer the heart of things ("Nature or God") through love of them than through anything else? "He prayeth best who loveth best both man and bird and beast."

Yet when all is said that can be said in favour of the

J. H. MUIRHEAD

above substitution, it still may be asked whether the habit which prevails even among philosophers, of using truth and reality as interchangeable terms may not have its justification from the side of knowledge-theory itself. Plato distinguished different levels of knowledge according as it was of things of sense and imagination, as in ordinary life, or, as in science, of things with their causes or reasons. Of the former the rising of the sun might be an instance, of the latter the revolution of the earth on its axis and its turning to the sun. In both these we distinguish between our knowing and the "fact known. But there is a higher level still, Plato held, in which these two are united but also transcended in a sense of an immediate vision and absorption in what is seen, and the mind seems at home with the very being of things. Such we may conceive was the vision which Kepler had when he seemed to see the sun and the planets as they are to God or which the poet has when he seems to live in the things he depicts and they in him. While to Western readers this doctrine has often proved a stumbling-block and rock of offence, to Eastern readers it is more likely to seem to be "telling them their own dream," and to be something verifiable in the everyday experience not only of the philosopher and the poet but of the saint. For my part I think that their dream has come to them through the "horn-gate"¹ and is a true one.

¹ According to the Greek poets false dreams were sent from Heaven to men through a gate of ivory and true dreams through one of horn.

OVERLEAF
*particulars of publications
of similar interest
issued by*



GEORGE ALLEN & UNWIN LTD
LONDON: 40 MUSEUM STREET, W.C.1
LEIPZIG: (F. VOLCKMAR) HOSPITALSTR. 10
CAPE TOWN: 73 ST. GEORGE'S STREET
TORONTO: 91 WELLINGTON STREET, WEST
BOMBAY: 15 GRAHAM ROAD, BALLARD ESTATE
WELLINGTON, N.Z.: 8 KINGS CRESCENT, LOWER HUTT
SYDNEY, N.S.W.: AUSTRALIA HOUSE, WYNYARD SQUARE

BOOKS BY S. RADHAKRISHNAN

Indian Philosophy

2 vols. Demy 8vo.

Vol. I, Revised Second Edition, 21s. net.

Vol. II, Revised Second Edition, 25s. net.

"A work of feeling as well as of lucid thought, an exposition of living interest."—*The Spectator*

The Hindu View of Life

La. Cr. 8vo, Cloth, 3s. 6d. net; Stiff Paper, 2s. 6d. net. Fifth Impression. Cheaper Edition.

"An admirable exposition of the basis of Aryan philosophy."—*The Spectator*.
UPTON LECTURES, OXFORD, 1926

An Idealist View of Life

Demy 8vo, Cloth, 7s. 6d. net; Paper, 5s. net. Revised and cheaper Second Edition.

"Beautifully written, comprehensively thought, and of high value."—*The Scotsman*. HIBBERT LECTURES, 1929

The Vedānta According to Śaṅkara and Rāmānuja

Demy 8vo, Cloth, 4s. 6d. net; Paper, 3s. 6d. net. Cheaper Edition.

"With his large knowledge and, still better, with his pride in and filial affection for the master minds of his own people, he is a sure-footed and interesting guide through their difficult teaching."—*British Weekly*

The Philosophy of the Upanisads

Foreword by RABINDRANATH TAGORE

Introduction by EDMOND HOLMES

Demy 8vo, Cloth, 5s. net; Stiffened Paper, 3s. 6d. net. Revised Second Edition.

"He has the gift of writing clear and forcible English, and he is thus admirably equipped to be an interpreter of the philosophy of India to English readers."—*Oxford Magazine*

Complete list of S. Radhakrishnan's works on application

LONDON: GEORGE ALLEN & UNWIN LTD

